

BRISTOL RECORD SOCIETY'S
PUBLICATIONS
VOL. XXXV

CALENDAR
OF THE
CORRESPONDENCE
OF THE
SMYTH FAMILY
OF
ASHTON COURT

1548-1642

CALENDAR
OF THE
CORRESPONDENCE
OF THE
SMYTH FAMILY
OF
ASHTON COURT

1548-1642

EDITED BY
J. H. BETTEY

Printed for the
BRISTOL RECORD SOCIETY
1982

ISSN 0305-8730
ISBN 0 901538 04 3

© *Joseph Bettey*

Produced for the Society by
Alan Sutton Publishing Limited, Gloucester
Printed in Great Britain

CONTENTS

	Page
Acknowledgments	vii
Introduction	
(a) The Smyth Family 1545–1642	ix
(b) The Sources	xxii
Note on transcription	xxv
List of abbreviations	xxvi
Calendar of Letters 1548–1642	3
Appendix 1 Undated Letters to Thomas Smyth	179
Appendix 11 Calendar of Miscellaneous Documents relating to Thomas Smyth	190
Index	204

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

I would like to thank all those who have helped in the production of this volume, particularly Miss Mary Williams, Bristol City Archivist, who read and commented upon the whole manuscript, Miss Judith Close and other members of the staff of the Bristol Record Office, Mr Geoffrey Langley and the staff of the Bristol Reference Library, and Mr Derek Shorrocks and the staff of the Somerset Record Office. I am also indebted to Mr Anton Bantock, to Miss Penelope Byrde of the Museum of Costume at Bath who identified various articles of clothing mentioned in the letters, to Dr Peter Edwards, and Professor David Underdown of Brown University for his help and suggestions about the political affairs in which Thomas Smyth was involved during the period 1640–42, and Dr Jean Vanes whose work on the early history of the Smyth family has been a constant help.

I acknowledge with thanks the kindness of Mr O.B. Hardison, Jr., the Director of the Folger Shakespeare Library, Washington, D.C., in allowing me to use the letters of the Smyth family which are owned by the Library. Professor Patrick McGrath, the General Editor of the Bristol Record Society has been a constant source of encouragement and guidance. I am grateful to Mrs Joy Flower and Mrs Rosemary Johnston for their secretarial assistance. Bristol Record Society is indebted to the Bristol Archives Office and in particular to Miss Mary Williams the City Archivist for permission to edit these manuscripts.

INTRODUCTION

(a) *The Smyth Family 1545–1642*

The Smyth family lived at Ashton Court in the parish of Long Ashton, just over the Somerset border from Bristol, from 1545 when the house and estate were purchased by John Smyth until just after the Second World War. The last male head of the family to live at Ashton Court was Sir Greville Smyth who died in 1901; his wife, Dame Emily Smyth, died in 1914. Dame Emily's daughter by a former marriage took the name Smyth, and was known as the Hon. Esmé Smyth; she lived at Ashton Court until her death in 1946. The contents of the house were sold in 1947, and in 1959 the house and grounds were acquired by Bristol Corporation.

The early history of the family provides a remarkable example of rapid rise from obscure beginnings as farmers and craftsmen in the fifteenth century, through trade and commerce in Bristol to a position of great wealth and to the status of landowning gentry by the later sixteenth century. The story of this rise, and of the family's origins at Aylburton, near Lydney in the Forest of Dean, during the fifteenth century, their move to Bristol and their success as tradesmen and merchants has already been told by Dr Jean Vanes in a previous volume in this series and need not be repeated here.¹ In her edition of the *Ledger of John Smythe*, covering the years 1538 to 1550, Dr Vanes has also shown the way in which John Smythe,² who was the real founder of the family's fortunes, acquired his immense wealth through trade, built up a thriving business as a merchant in the port of Bristol, and was able to purchase the house and estate at Ashton Court from Sir Thomas Arundell in 1545, and also invested extensively in lands in south Gloucestershire and north Somerset.³ His acquisitions included the manors of Stanshawes and Sturdon

¹ Jean Vanes (ed.), *The Ledger of John Smythe, 1538–1550*, Bristol Record Society, 1975, pp. 1–29.

See also J.H. Bettey, *The Rise of a Gentry Family, The Smyths of Ashton Court c1500–1642*, Bristol Branch of the Historical Association, 1978.

² During the fifteenth and early sixteenth centuries the family name was spelt in a variety of different ways; later members of the family tended to use 'Smyth' and for the sake of uniformity this form has been adopted throughout this volume.

³ Jean Vanes, *op. cit.* pp. 25–26. See also B.R.O. AC/D1/143 – 150; 36074/13, 14 a–b, 35, 36. P.R.O. E 318/1016, 1017.

and other lands at Winterbourne and Newnham in south Gloucestershire, houses in Bristol including his own house in Small Street, and property in Somerset including lands at Huntspill, Ston Easton, Keynsham, Wookey, Durleigh, Bridgwater and Wells. The estate at Ashton Court consisted of the fifteenth-century manor house comprising a tower, great hall, gallery, parlour, chapel, kitchen, several chambers, stable buildings, barns, dairy, brew-house and lodgings for estate workmen; it also included most of the surrounding land.³

Only a few of the letters of John Smyth (or Smythe) survive, and most of this volume is therefore concerned with the correspondence of his two sons, Hugh and Matthew, of his grandson Hugh (later Sir Hugh), and of his great grandson Thomas Smyth who died in 1642. The early letters illustrate very well the contrast between the cautious, hard-headed business-man, John Smyth, and the rebellious nature of his sons, especially the violent disposition of his eldest son, Hugh.

Notwithstanding the large fortune which he had acquired and the lands which he had been able to purchase, John Smyth did not seek to become a country gentleman himself. He continued until his death in 1555 to live in his merchant's house in Bristol, and did not move permanently into the manor house at Ashton Court. His few surviving letters as well as his informative Ledger Book reveal him as a shrewd, careful man, anxious to avoid difficulties and legal costs wherever possible. They show the care he took over the details of his trading ventures and over the investment of his profits in land. They also show that he was quick to take advantage of the opportunities presented by the confiscations of ecclesiastical property and the sale of former Church lands by the Crown. In 1546 for example, he bought from the King the manor of Ashton Meriets, adjoining his estate at Long Ashton, and the advowson of the parish church, all of which had previously belonged to the Priory of St Peter in Bath. In the following year he bought the lands and buildings of the former Choke chantry in Long Ashton.

John Smyth was also concerned with the purchase by the Corporation of Bristol of various lands and properties in and around Bristol. In 1544, for example he lent £20 to the city 'in lone for to hellp pay to the Kyng for the landes that the Lord Lisle had in Bristowe and Thereabowt'. During the next few years he was also active in helping to arrange for the purchase of former monastic lands by the city. In 1547 when the chantries were dissolved, John Smyth became mayor of Bristol and was involved in the purchase of former chantry lands and property by the Corporation, including the Chapel of the Assumption on Bristol bridge.

The picture which emerges of John Smyth from his ledger and his

letters is of an able, hard-working and public-spirited man. His business as a merchant grew rapidly and was extremely profitable. He traded in woollen cloth which he obtained from clothiers in Somerset and Wiltshire and sent to France and Spain; he also exported leather which came from the Forest of Dean and from Wales, lead from the Mendips, and wheat. His imports included large quantities of wine from Bordeaux, iron from northern Spain, and woad and other dyestuffs from Toulouse, the Azores and Genoa. In addition he imported oil for use by cloth-workers and soap-boilers, and small quantities of fish and salt. These goods were conveyed in various ships, including his own ship the *Trinity* which in 1539 was reckoned to be worth £250. The *Trinity* was regularly used for trade with Spain and Bordeaux, and her cargoes included the goods of many Bristol merchants, for John Smyth and other Bristol merchants adopted the sensible policy of consigning their goods to several ships in order to lessen the total loss which might follow the wreck of one ship. It is a tribute to John Smyth's energy and business enterprise that as well as managing a large and lucrative trading business and establishing his family as major land-owners, he was also able to devote so much time to public affairs.

He had a few staunch friends, including several Bristol merchants, among them some who had been his own apprentices, and most notably the Bristolian, Dr George Owen, who was Henry VIII's physician and an influential figure at Court. It would be wrong to over-stress the picture of a sober merchant, however, for there was another side to John Smyth's character. He obviously dressed well, and the inventory of his goods made after his death shows his clothing as worth the large sum of £42, and includes several fine gowns and cloaks. Somewhat surprisingly, his will reveals that he had a young illegitimate daughter living in London to whom he openly left forty marks, to be conveyed to her by Hugh Hammond, a Bristol merchant who had been one of Smyth's apprentices,

'I give and bequeathe to my base daughter nowe dwelling in London whome my frende Hugh Hammon(d) doo knowe, fortye markes good and lawfull money of Englande to be payde at her maryadge yf she lyve to be maryed'.

No further details have been found concerning this daughter. By his will dated 1555, John Smyth left most of his property to his two sons Hugh and Matthew, although he made bequests to the poor at Long Ashton and on his manor of Sturdon, and left money to be used 'in dressinge the cawsey (causeway) that ledeth from thende of Bedmynster towarde my mansyon house at Longe Ashton'. The inventory of his possessions shows him as a very wealthy man, with

goods and money to the value of £2,263 14s. 0d. including the large sum of £990 0s. 0d. in ready money, and plate worth £335 12s. 0¼d. He was still primarily a merchant, however, and his house in Small Street included his 'shopp' or counting house, with its scales and weights, and at the time of his death there were thirteen tons of iron worth £130 stored at his house.⁴

When he became mayor of Bristol for the first time in 1547 John Smyth was already a wealthy man, a leading Bristol merchant with a large landed estate and a notable country mansion, his own grant of arms, and his two sons at Oxford. By the end of his life in 1555 John Smyth's wealth and possessions were such that he was being wooed by the leading gentry families of Somerset and Gloucestershire.⁵ John Smyth was the founder of the family fortunes, none of his successors engaged in trade and none made money from their estates on anything like the scale which John Smyth's trading ventures produced. Earlier, some time before 1534, the rising status of the Smyth family had been marked by the marriage of John Smyth's sister, Elizabeth, to Thomas Phelips, son of Richard Phelips M.P. for Melcomb Regis in Dorset. Richard Phelips had merchant connections in the Dorset ports, had leased the customs of Poole in 1522, and had interests also at Bridgwater and at Bristol where he certainly dealt with John Smyth. By this marriage the Smyths were allied to another family whose wealth and influence was rapidly increasing; the youngest son of Thomas Phelips and his wife Elizabeth was Sir Edward Phelips, a prominent lawyer, Speaker of the House of Commons in 1604, Master of the Rolls in 1611, and the builder of Montacute House. Numerous letters from members of the Phelips family are included in this collection.⁶

For his sons, John Smyth clearly had high aspirations, and they were evidently expected to adopt a life-style very different from that of their father. Hugh was born in 1530 and Matthew in 1533. By 1545 both were at Oxford and in 1550 went on to complete their education at the Inns of Court. Already as students they displayed a reckless, defiant spirit and were involved in various serious quarrels. In July 1552 Hugh Smyth was summoned before the authorities of the Inner Temple and was fined and suspended for three months for his part in some violent quarrel which also involved his brother Matthew.⁷ In the following year both brothers were again in serious

⁴ See Letters 1, 2, 5-9. Also P.R.O. E 318/1016-1017; B.R.O. AC/F8/1.

⁵ See Letter 3.

⁶ *D.N.B.*, XV, p. 1029. This wrongly gives Elizabeth as John Smyth's daughter; she was his sister. See also J.H.C. Phelips, 'Phelips of Montacute', *Somerset and Dorset Notes and Queries*, XXXI, March 1981, pp. 85-95.

⁷ F.A. Inderwick, *A Calendar of the Inner Temple Records*, 1896, I, (1505-1603), pp. 165-166.

trouble over a quarrel with a Mr Carew. Neither the identity of Mr Carew nor the occasion of the quarrel is clear from the surviving evidence, but the Carews were an important west-country family, and some members of the family lived at Camerton in north Somerset, among them Thomas Carew who was of a similar age to the Smyth brothers. This Thomas Carew may well have been the person with whom the brothers quarrelled so violently in London, though there is no firm evidence to support this conclusion apart from Carew's later involvement with them which will be described later. Whatever the cause of the quarrel it was evidently very serious for John Smyth had to use the good offices of his friend and fellow-Bristolian, Dr George Owen, the court physician, to intervene on his sons' behalf and it cost him £40 to extricate them from the difficulty.⁸

In December 1553 Hugh Smyth was married to Maud Bycombe the younger of the two daughters of Hugh Bycombe of Crowcombe in Somerset. This marriage marks the next stage in the assimilation of the Smyth family into the ranks of the county gentry, and with his wife Hugh Smyth received lands in Bishops Lydeard, Stogumber, Timberscombe and Dunster. Hugh Bycombe's elder daughter and only other child, Elizabeth, was married in 1557 to Thomas Carew of Camerton.⁹ After his marriage Hugh Smyth took up residence at Ashton Court and began to live as a country gentleman. John Smyth died in 1556, and his widow Joan lived on at Small Street until her death in 1560. During the 1560's the house in Small Street and most of the rest of the Smyth property in Bristol was sold.¹⁰

Hugh Smyth became a Justice of the Peace for Somerset and his correspondence shows the way in which he devoted himself to the administration of his estates and to local affairs. He continued his father's policy of buying land, and for example in 1556 he added the manor of Mark in Somerset to the estate, and in 1562 purchased the manor of Filton in the parish of Whitchurch. Hugh Smyth was active in exploiting the agricultural as well as the financial potential of his estate, and at his death the stock on the demesne farm included 23 horses, 18 oxen, 40 kine, 20 pigs and a flock of more than 550 sheep.¹¹ He proved, however, to be an highly unsatisfactory Justice

⁸ See Letters I and 10. For the Carew family see *Somerset and Dorset Notes and Queries*, VI, 1898, pp. 49–56; J. Collinson, *History of Somerset*, 1791, III, p. 516.

⁹ *Ibid.* See also H.C. Maxwell Lyte (ed.), *Historical Notes on Some Somerset Manors*, *Somerset Record Society*, (Extra Series), 1931, pp. 68, 292. At his death in 1580 Hugh Smyth left bequests to various friends including Thomas Carew. *Somerset Record Office DD/SAS (C 1193) 5/1*, p. 50. For the marriage contract see B.R.O. AC/S1/1a.

¹⁰ B.R.O. AC/F1/4–5; AC/F8/3–4

¹¹ P.R.O. E 318/1611; B.R.O. AC/F8/3; C.P.R. 1555–57, 246.

of the Peace, for his violent disposition did not for long enable him to live at peace with his neighbours, and the correspondence shows something of the constant complaints which were made about his conduct, culminating in the dramatic incident in Sir George Norton's warren in September 1579 which is described with graphic detail in Letter 29.¹² The affair in the warren had resulted in the death of one of Hugh Smyth's servants, John Blanche, and was sufficiently serious for it to come to the notice of the Privy Council, and all the parties involved were summoned to London for trial. Because of his increasingly poor health, and perhaps also because he was increasingly ostracized by his fellow Justices in Somerset, Hugh Smyth purchased a house in London and took up residence there for the trial.¹³ In London his health deteriorated and he died on the 2nd March 1581.¹⁴ Hugh Smyth was buried in the church of St Sepulchre in London, but a few months later, his body was disinterred and brought back to Long Ashton for burial. An indication of the style in which he had lived and of the contrast which this presents with the much more sober way of life of his father, can be seen in the expenses of his funeral. These amounted to £243 and included dressing both his house and the churches of St Sepulchre and Long Ashton in black, an elaborate display of his coat of arms and a sumptuous funeral cortège. By contrast John Smyth had ordered that he should be buried with a minimum of ceremony. The difference between the funeral services of father and son is a measure of how far the family had progressed in the social scale between 1555 and 1581.¹⁵

In 1574 Hugh Smyth's daughter Elizabeth married Edward Morgan of Llantarnam in Monmouthshire and this collection contains a good deal of correspondence from members of the Morgan family.¹⁶ Hugh Smyth had no male heir, and upon his death

¹² For other complaints about Hugh Smyth and for the occasions when his misdemeanours were brought to the attention of the Privy Council during the 1560's and 1570's see J.H. Bettey, *The Rise of a Gentry Family, The Smyths of Ashton Court c1500-1642*, 1978, pp. 10-11. See also Letters 12 and 23.

¹³ See Letter 39

¹⁴ During his last illness in London Hugh Smyth was attended by a Portuguese Jew, Roderigo Lopez, one of the most famous medical practitioners of the time, and the personal physician to Queen Elizabeth. It was upon Lopez that Shakespeare is said to have based the character of Shylock in *The Merchant of Venice*. Sotheby's 'Fonthill' Sale Catalogue, 5-6 July 1977, Lot 119. I am grateful to Miss Mary Williams for drawing my attention to this reference.

¹⁵ B.R.O. AC/F1/3; 36074/68. Even after Hugh Smyth's death complaints continued to be made about his dealings as a justice of the peace. See Col. S.P. Dom., 1581-1590, p. 147; A.P.C. 1580-1581, p. 276.

¹⁶ For details of the Morgan family see G.T. Clarke, *The Genealogies of Morgan and Glamorgan*, 1886, p. 322. Also B.R.O. AC/52/1-11.

the Smyth estates passed to his brother Matthew. Matthew Smyth had remained at the Middle Temple as a barrister; he had prospered in his profession and had purchased lands in Essex and also possessed a fine house at Redcross Street by the Barbican in London. He had married Jane daughter of Thomas Tewther of Ludlow and widow of Bartholomew Skerne of Pattiswick Hall in Essex. By her first marriage she had three daughters, the eldest of whom, Frances, married Edward Gifford of Whiteladies in Staffordshire; a letter written by Frances Gifford to her half-brother, Sir Hugh Smyth, and another written by her son Bartholomew Gifford are included in this collection.¹⁷

Matthew Smyth had one son, Hugh, born in 1574, who was to succeed to the estates, and one daughter Anne who in 1587 was married to Maurice Rodney of Rodney Stoke, thus providing a further link between the Smyths and another important Somerset gentry family.¹⁸ On his brother's death in 1581, Matthew Smyth and his family took up residence at Ashton Court. It is clear from the correspondence in this volume that Matthew took an active interest in his estate and its management, and also that as an eminent London lawyer, he was much consulted by neighbouring landowners such as the Berkeleys, Horners, Winters, Arthurs and Phelips as well as by his relatives, the Morgans, upon a great variety of legal and financial matters. Matthew Smyth's legal eminence also brought him the friendship of Thomas Wilson, Secretary of State to Queen Elizabeth, and of Sir John Popham, Recorder of Bristol and M.P. for the city, who was later to become Lord Chief Justice. Popham was an executor of Matthew's will and one of the guardians of Hugh Smyth during his minority.¹⁹ Matthew Smyth did not long enjoy the Ashton Court estate, however, for he died in 1583 and was buried in the newly-constructed family vault in Long Ashton church.²⁰

Matthew Smyth's only son, Hugh Smyth, was eight years old when his father died, and the estate was managed by his mother, Jane Smyth until her death in 1594. Letter 96 shows the way in which Jane Smyth added to the estate, and both Hugh and Matthew had purchased additional lands and properties, so that by the end of the sixteenth century the estate had been greatly increased by the

¹⁷ B.R.O. 36074/2. Somerset Record Office DD/SAS (C 1193) 5/1, pp. 43–44. See Letters 107 and 169.

¹⁸ S.R.O. DD/SAS (C1193) 5/1 pp. 54–56.

¹⁹ B.R.O. AC/S5/1–7. See also Letter 17 footnote 1, and Letter 31 footnote 1.

²⁰ In his will Matthew Smyth ordered that he was to be buried in the church of Long Ashton 'in the vault there latelie made by me'. Unlike his brother, he ordered that the cost of his funeral was not to exceed 200 marks and that no heralds were to be hired. S.R.O. DD/SAS (C 1193) 5/1, p. 52.

inclusion of the manors of Ridgeway and Elmington in south Gloucestershire and Compton Dando, Bishopsworth, Whitchurch and Horsington in Somerset as well as various properties in Bristol. The manor of Ashton Philips adjacent to the estate in Long Ashton had also been acquired and the deer park around the house had been extended.²¹ In 1596 Hugh Smyth came of age, and married Elizabeth, the daughter of Sir Thomas Gorges of Langford (now called Longford) Castle in Wiltshire. Her mother was the Swedish-born Hellena, Marchioness of Northampton, some of whose letters to her son-in-law, Hugh Smyth and to her grandson, Thomas Smyth, are included in this volume.²²

This marriage into the Gorges family brought the Smyths into alliance with an ancient family of great wealth and close connections with the Court. Hugh Smyth's large estates made him one of the most considerable landowners in north Somerset, and he was among those who were knighted by James I on his progress from Scotland to London in 1603. Sir Hugh travelled to Worksop to meet the King and to receive his Knighthood.²³ In 1605 Sir Hugh Smyth was one of those chosen to accompany the Earl of Hertford on an embassy to the Archduke of Austria to complete a peace agreement between Austria and England.²⁴

It is clear from the letters in this volume that Sir Hugh Smyth was a melancholy, difficult man, afflicted with ill health. There are constant references in the correspondence to Sir Hugh's depression and ill-temper, and to attempts by his friends and relatives to encourage him to break out of his melancholy. During the last years of his life he appears to have been increasingly afflicted by ill-health, and there are numerous references in the letters to physicians, medicines, sleeping draughts, medicinal waters, and to Sir Hugh's morose temper and reluctance to receive visitors.²⁵ His long-suffering wife, Elizabeth, wrote in despair to their son Thomas, then at Oxford in 1626, '... you may imagine what good company wee are like to have here, for here comes not any but such as are sent for and coler (anger) doth as much abound with us as ever it did, God increase my patience to endure it still.'²⁶ Earlier letters reveal a different side of Sir Hugh's character, and show that he was greatly

²¹ B.R.O. AC/S1/2; AC/M3/20; AC/M11/13; AC/S7/9 a-b; 36074/3; P.R.O. E 318/1611.

²² For an account of the Gorges family see R. Gorges, *The Story of a Family*, Boston, 1944. See also Letters 103 and 104.

²³ B.R.O. AC/F1/4; 36074/3.

²⁴ B.R.O. 36074/46.

²⁵ See Letters 149, 153, 156 and 160.

²⁶ Letter 160, see also Letters 116, 117, 139 and 166.

interested in hunting and in horses and horse-breeding, and that he dressed in the most up-to-date manner. The series of letters from his godson Stephen Smith in London also show that he was much interested in the latest fashions and avid to acquire the newest styles in clothes.²⁷ Sir Hugh's portrait which is now in the Red Lodge, Bristol, shows him as a fierce, brooding figure, with harsh, staring eyes and dressed in a fearsome suit of black armour. In his later years Sir Hugh seems to have lived almost as a recluse, and his constant ill-health and depression provide the dark background to the delightful series of letters written by his wife, Elizabeth, to their young son Thomas at Oxford during the 1620's. Sir Hugh Smyth died in 1627 and was buried in the family vault in Long Ashton church. A portrait of Elizabeth Smyth, now in the Bristol Art Gallery, shows an attractive though somewhat sad-looking figure. She emerges from her letters as a warm-hearted person, full of concern for her husband and children, and especially for her son, Thomas. Thomas Smyth, the only son of Sir Hugh and his wife Elizabeth, was born in 1609. It is to Thomas that the bulk of the correspondence in this volume relates, and Appendix II also provides a miscellaneous collection of other documents relating to him. From this material we can obtain a full account of Thomas Smyth's career and of his personality. It is clear from the letters that he was a popular, likeable man, with a wide circle of friends and that his advice and friendship were much sought after. In 1622 at the age of 13 Thomas was sent to St John's College, Oxford, and the letters from his mother and from his tutor at St John's, Thomas Atkinson, provide an interesting picture of the young boy at Oxford, and of the primary concern both of his family and of his tutor, which was to prepare him to be a gentleman. In 1624 for example Thomas Atkinson assured Sir Hugh Smyth that scholarship was not to be the main aim of Thomas Smyth's education, '... when when you left him here I tooke upon mee the charge of a Gentleman, I shall blush to returne him to you againe a meere Scholler.'²⁸ Thomas matriculated at St John's in 1624 and stayed at Oxford until 1626.²⁹ In the following year, when Thomas was 18 years of age his father died. Three days before, on 12 April 1627, Thomas Smyth had married Florence, the eldest daughter of Lord Poulett of Hinton St George in Somerset.³⁰

²⁷ See Letters 112, 113, 114 and 118.

²⁸ Letter 127.

²⁹ Joseph Foster, *Alumni Oxonienses 1500-1714*, 1891, IV, p. 1382. For the purposes of an Oxford education see particularly Letters 127, 139 and 166.

³⁰ For the marriage settlement see B.R.O. AC/S 13/1-4. Also P.R.O. C 142/438/130 for a list of the property which Thomas inherited on his father's death. The haste

This marriage linked the Smyths to one of the wealthiest county families and brought them into the forefront of Somerset society. The marriage was evidently a happy one, judging by the charming letters written by Florence to her husband, and which he obviously kept carefully. Several children were born to Thomas and Florence Smyth, but only one son, Hugh, survived, and in 1661 was to become the first baronet. His letters show that Thomas Smyth was much concerned that the succession of his estate depended upon a sole male heir, and that he was also greatly exercised about the boy's education.³¹ The alliance with the Pouletts was one reason why Thomas was able during 1628 to enter Parliament as member for Bridgwater, in spite of the apparent misgivings of the Mayor and Burgesses at having so young an M.P.³²

In 1629 Thomas Smyth's widowed mother, Elizabeth, married her cousin Sir Ferdinando Gorges; she could hardly have married anyone less like her first husband, for Sir Ferdinando was an active, vigorous man, much involved in the colonisation of New England. Sir Ferdinando and his wife lived mainly at the Lower Court in Long Ashton, and occasionally also at the Great House in Bristol.³³ Earlier Sir Hugh Smyth had withdrawn his money from the New England project and had deeply offended Sir Ferdinando, but Thomas Smyth evidently remained on very friendly terms with his step-father.³⁴

During the 1630's Thomas Smyth played an active part as a Justice of the Peace in Somerset; he was treasurer for hospitals and for maimed soldiers, and was named on various commissions. In 1639 he was recommended as a suitable person to be Sheriff because of his wealth and social position, and also no doubt because he was inevitably associated with the royalist cause through his connection with Lord Poulett.³⁵ During the period extensive work was done on

with which Thomas was married, just before his father's death, was to prevent the Court of Wards having any hand in arranging a marriage for him when he succeeded to his father's property while still legally a minor. M.J. Hawkins (ed.), *Sales of Wards in Somerset 1603–1641*, *Somerset Record Society*, 67, 1965, p. XV.

³¹ B.R.O. AC/F1/4; S.R.O. DD/SAS (C 1193) 5/1 pp. 43–44. See also Letters 374, 376, 380.

³² See Letter 182. Details of speeches made in Parliament in June 1628 are contained in Letter 192.

³³ R. Gorges, *The Story of a Family*, Boston, 1944, pp. 132–133; C.M. MacInnes, *Ferdinando Gorges and New England*, Bristol Branch of the Historical Association, 1965.

³⁴ See Letters and other documents 121, 122, 222, 225, 227, 272, 308, 365, 421 and 426.

³⁵ P.R.O. SP 16/432/34; C 181/4, Fols. 3v, 172v; C 181/5, fols. 11, 94, 317. B.R.O. 36074/149, 150. E.H. Bates Harbin (ed.), *Quarter Sessions Records for Somerset 1625–1639*, *Somerset Record Society*, 24, 1908, pp. 196, 220, 225, 246, 251, 262 and 285.

Ashton Court including the building of a new west wing in the most modern style. Some account of this work emerges from the Account Book of which extracts are given in Appendix II.³⁶ The impressive addition which Thomas Smyth made to his house at Ashton Court, designed in a classical style which was architecturally very advanced for its time, survives as a visible reminder of the wealth, position and opulent life-style of the Smyth family during the seventeenth century. Even their resources may have been strained by the cost of enlarging their house, however, and it was probably his lavish expenditure on building work that caused Thomas to be so concerned about his income and about the management of his estates during the later 1630s, and to invent various abortive schemes for sharing households and other ways of saving money.³⁷ Thomas Smyth remained on good terms with both his father-in-law, Lord Poulett, and his energetic uncle, Sir Robert Phelips, during their bitter struggle for political supremacy in Somerset during the 1630s. There are several letters in this collection from Sir Robert Phelips, and the series of letters to Thomas from Lord Poulett during the 1630s and early 1640s is particularly interesting for the account the letters give of national events. In 1635 Lord Poulett was in command of the 'Constant Reformation' in the Channel Fleet and was knighted at sea by Lord Lindsay in September 1636. He was summoned to the Great Council at York during 1639 and in 1640 was one of the royal commissioners for the negotiations with the Scots at Ripon.³⁸ It is probable that Thomas Smyth was not so fervently attached to the royal cause as his father-in-law and his step-father, Sir Ferdinando Gorges. He was concerned about the difficulties which the royal policy created in Somerset during the later 1630s, and he was opposed to the 'ship-money' taxation. In 1639 he refused to contribute to the loan for the war against the Scots, and he seems to have had little sympathy with the Earl of Strafford.³⁹ The letters in this collection, however, give less information about his own political opinions, than about the complicated manoeuvring amongst the county gentry in Somerset to secure county or borough seats at the two elections in 1640. The correspondence provides a detailed picture of the troubled state of affairs in Somerset and of the events leading up to the Civil War, as

³⁶ See Appendix II, Document 418.

³⁷ See Appendix II, Documents 419, 420 and 426.

³⁸ S.W. Bates Harbin, *Members of Parliament for the County of Somerset*, Taunton, 1939, p. 137. Letters 270, 273, 279, 312, 313 and 314.

³⁹ J. Rushworth, *Historical Collections*, 1721, III, p. 914. See also Letters 280 and 368. Letters 361 and 380 suggest that Thomas Smyth was not sympathetic to the cause of the bishops during 1639–41.

well as of the political situation in the county during 1639, 1640 and 1641.

Thomas Smyth was elected as a member for the county in the spring of 1640 together with Sir Ralph Hopton, apparently only a week after both had agreed to cease their attempts to secure election.⁴⁰ He failed to be elected as a county member for the Long Parliament in October 1640, but was elected for Bridgwater early in 1641 after the election of Edmund Wyndham had been declared void. Because of the number of 'Smiths' in the House of Commons, it is impossible to trace the contributions made by Thomas Smyth as an M.P., but the letters contain much information about the political scene during 1640 and 1641, including the unpopularity of the bishops, the Scots rebellion, the trial of the Earl of Strafford and other matters. During his absences from Ashton Court, Thomas was anxious to be kept informed about the estate, and the letters from his bailiff, John Edwards, provide information about the work done, the progress of crops and livestock, manorial matters and about household affairs including the education of Thomas Smyth's only son Hugh then aged nine, for whom a private tutor, Mr Foster, had been engaged. Thomas was obviously not satisfied either with the boy's progress nor with the tutor's discipline.⁴¹ In July 1642 Thomas Smyth followed the instructions of the King in executing the Commission of Array and was expelled from the House of Commons on 5 August 1642.⁴²

In spite of any misgivings about the royal policy he may have had earlier, when the Civil War began Thomas Smyth firmly supported the Crown. During July 1642 he joined with his step-father, Sir Ferdinando Gorges, in raising a troop of horse among the gentry of Somerset and Gloucestershire to fight in the royal cause. They made an unsuccessful attempt to persuade the Mayor of Bristol to admit them to the city, and later joined the royalist forces which assembled under the Marquis of Hertford at Wells. On 1 August 1642 Thomas and Sir Ferdinando were both present at the skirmish at Shepton Mallet and took part in the arrest of William Strode, one of the leaders of the parliamentary forces in Somerset.⁴³ Later they

⁴⁰ See Appendix II, Document 423 and 424.

⁴¹ See Letter 374.

⁴² M.F. Keeler, *The Long Parliament 1640–1641*, Philadelphia 1954, pp. 342–343. *Calendar of State Papers, (Domestic)*, 1641–43, p. 366. See also Letter 382.

⁴³ For a contemporary account of the events in Somerset during July and August 1642 see C.E.H. Chadwyck Healey, (ed.), 'Bellum Civile' *Somerset Record Society*, 18, 1902, pp. 5–7; also *House of Lords Journal* 5, 278–9. The full story, together with further references, is told in David Underdown, *Somerset in the Civil War and Interregnum*, 1973, pp. 24–38.

were both in the royalist force led by the Marquis of Hertford which was besieged in Sherborne Castle in September 1642. Compelled by superior forces to abandon the castle at Sherborne, the royalists marched to Minehead, and crossed over by ship to Cardiff. Here Thomas Smyth contracted smallpox and died 2 October 1642. His body was brought back by Sir Ferdinando to Long Ashton for burial in the family vault in the parish church.⁴⁴

The death of Thomas Smyth in 1642 is a suitable point at which to end this edition of the correspondence which covers the rise of the Smyth family from a position as newly-risen Bristol merchants to one which placed them amongst the leading county gentry. The difference between Thomas Smyth, with his Oxford education, his great wealth, fine house in the most modern style set in its spacious deer-park, with his jester and twenty-eight other household servants, and his great grandfather, John Smyth, the hard-working and public-spirited merchant who had founded the family fortune, is a measure of the distance which the family had travelled between 1548 and 1642, the period covered by these letters.

As might be expected, the family correspondence contained in this volume is exceedingly diverse in its subject matter, including the personal concerns, health and domestic arrangements of various members of the family and their friends, business correspondence, household and estate affairs, as well as details of local government, parliamentary business and national events. The early letters contain material about John Smyth's purchase of former monastic and chantry lands in Somerset and Gloucestershire, about the running of the large estate and the household at Ashton Court, and concerning the tempestuous careers of Hugh and Matthew Smyth at Oxford and at the Inns of Court during the period 1545–1553. The correspondence of Hugh and Matthew Smyth provides numerous sidelights on Elizabethan local government, the actions of the justices of the peace, levying taxes, raising soldiers for Ireland and the training of the local militia, as well as on Hugh Smyth's turbulent career as a justice of the peace culminating in the murder of John Blanche in 1579. The Smyth family apparently adhered without question to the protestant faith, and there are few references to religious matters in their correspondence, although Letter 80 contains an interesting reference to a priest being sheltered in a tenant's house at Whitchurch, and Thomas Smyth was involved in the presentation of incumbents to various benefices in Somerset. The early seventeenth century letters of Sir Hugh Smyth and his wife Elizabeth show the family in increasingly close relation-

⁴⁴ B.R.O. AC/F1/4; 36074/79. See also Appendix II, Document 430.

ships with wealthy and influential families such as the Gorges, Herberts and Pouletts, and includes news of national affairs and of life at Court, especially the account of the visit by Charles I and his Queen to Wilton in 1625 which is charmingly described in Letter 152. As already mentioned, Sir Hugh Smyth's correspondence also provides remarkably detailed information about the latest London fashions, for like many country gentlemen of his time, Sir Hugh was evidently very anxious to dress in the latest style. Without doubt the most charming of the letters are those from Elizabeth Smyth to her young son Thomas at Oxford, full of affection and concern for his welfare, and with numerous references to his clothing, his tailor, his studies and his progress in learning to live like a gentleman. Thomas Smyth's letters from Oxford and those of his tutor, Thomas Atkinson, are likewise full of information concerning the life and society of the University, as well as showing increasing concern for Sir Hugh Smyth's failing health and uncertain, melancholy temper.

The largest number of the letters in this volume are addressed to Thomas Smyth, and, together with other documents relating to him which are included in Appendix II, provide a detailed, intimate view of his character, the conduct of his affairs, the running of the estate, building work at Ashton Court and his relations with his wife Florence and with his father-in-law, Lord Poulett. Thomas Smyth's correspondence also provides a great deal of information about Parliamentary affairs, national events and about local government during the period 1629–40. They include material about the proceedings in the Parliaments of 1628 and 1629, about the local unpopularity of the royal policy during the 1630s, the reluctance with which ship money and other impositions were paid, difficulties with the local militia and a close view of the fierce rivalry in local affairs between Lord Poulett and Sir Robert Phelps. Thomas Smyth's letters also provide a detailed personal view of the political and military events leading to the Civil War, including local reactions and political manoeuvring, the fortunes of the royal army during 1639, the two elections of 1640, and Parliamentary affairs during 1641.

(b) *The Sources*

The majority of the Letters and all the other documents in this volume are from the massive collection of letters, estate papers, manorial records, maps, plans and personal documents relating to the Smyth family in the Bristol Record Office, and are reproduced here by kind permission of the City Archivist. This remarkable collection of documents was preserved by successive members of the Smyth family and was kept in the muniment room at Ashton Court. The first and largest part of the collection was acquired by the

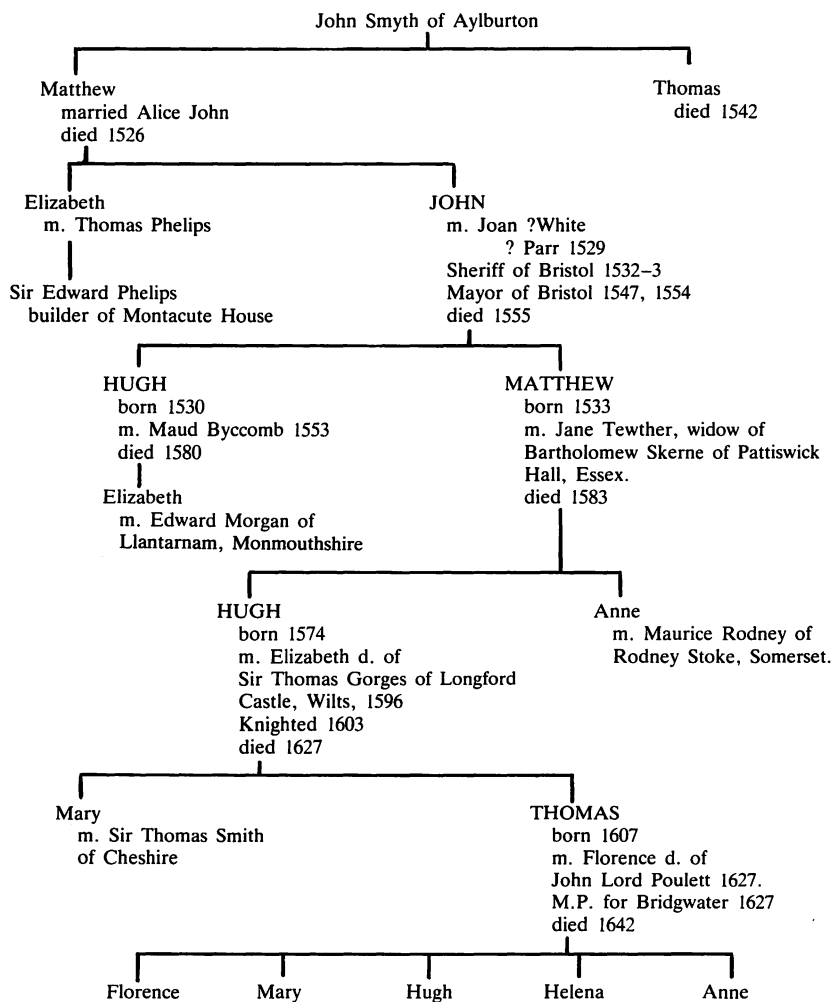
Bristol Record Office when the contents of the house were dispersed after the Second World War; these documents are listed under the reference letters AC/ —. In July 1977 a second collection of documents relating to the Smyth family of Ashton Court was purchased by the City of Bristol at Sothebys; this part of the collection has the reference 36074/—. A few of the letters sold by Sothebys were purchased by the Folger Shakespeare Library in Washington, and the Library has generously given permission for these letters to be reproduced in this volume. They are given the reference here of 'Folger Shakespeare Library, Smyth Letters'. One letter written by Thomas Smyth has been included from the Phelips papers in the Somerset Record Office by kind permission of the County Archivist, and a fragment of a letter which is quoted by R. Gorges in *The Story of a Family*, Boston 1944, but of which the original cannot now be found, has also been included.

During the early twentieth century, transcripts of a few of the Smyth letters were made by L.V. Way, a relative of the family, and these, bound into a volume, are in the Bristol Reference Library, (Reference B 28176). The transcripts include a few letters of which the originals do not survive in the Bristol Record Office and these are also included in this volume.

GENEALOGICAL TABLE

The Smyth Family of Long Ashton

c 1500-1642



NOTE ON TRANSCRIPTION

Many of the letters of the Smyth family are very long, and have had to be severely reduced for inclusion in this volume. The main concern throughout has been to give as full a picture as possible of the development of the Smyth family and their estates, of the personalities and interests of the various members of the family and their correspondents, and of the way in which national and political affairs affected the lives and domestic arrangements of the family. Many of the later letters give details of important national events and these are reproduced as fully as space would allow.

In transcribing and calendaring, the suggestions for editors made by R.F. Hunnisett, *Editing Records for Publication*, 1977, have been followed as far as possible. Accordingly New Style dating for years is used throughout the Calendar, and each year has been treated as beginning on 1 January not on 25 March. Where all or part of the date of a letter is not given in the original but has been inferred from the contents, that part of the date is enclosed within square brackets; editorial insertions are likewise distinguished by square brackets. Quotations from the letters are distinguished from calendared material by being indented in the text. In those parts of letters which are quoted in full the spelling of the original has been followed; abbreviations have been extended, obvious slips of the pen corrected, and modern punctuation has been added where this made the sense of the letter more obvious.

LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS

A.C.	Ashton Court Manuscripts
A.P.C.	<i>Acts of the Privy Council</i>
B.R.O.	Bristol Record Office
C.P.R.	<i>Calendar of Patent Rolls</i>
Collinson	J. Collinson, <i>History of Somerset</i> , 1791
D.N.B.	<i>Dictionary of National Biography</i>
P.R.O.	Public Record Office
S.R.O.	Somerset Record Office
T.S.	Thomas Smyth (1609–1642)

THE LETTERS

**1. JOHN SMYTH TO ONE OF THE COMMISSIONERS FOR
CHANTRIES IN LONDON, PROBABLY ROBERT KELWAY;¹
COPY, NO HEADING.**

BRISTOL 25 NOVEMBER 1548

Smyth states that he had delivered to the bearer, William Martyn, servant to Dr Owen,² the particulars of the chantry of Long Ashton 'whereunto it may please you to sett your name'. The sum of £181 2s. 8d. due for the chantry has already been paid to Sir John William's servant. He also sends a copy of Sir John Choke's deed for the church house and certain lands in Long Ashton.³

I heare say that Mr Moryce meaneth to intitle the King of hit. I trust that you being one of the Commissioners will not suffer him to do unto me such wronge.

Smyth refers to 'my too chappells in Ashton' and to

lxxiii^c dz of lead that coveryd won of them, which chappells and lead be myne as members of the church of Longashton which King Henry the VIIIth sold unto me as by the trewe copy of the patent which this berer have to shewe you may apere.

He also refers to the fact that Hugh Brooke and Mr Kenn each have a chapel in the parish of Long Ashton.⁴

Syr I have willed this berer to send me the particulars of other things which I entend to bye . . . as I may be able I will recompense for your dot and signet, I do most hertly thank you.⁵

Endorsed is a copy of the list of documents entrusted to William Martyn and instructions given to him, dated 24 November 1548:

- (i) Particular of the chantry of Long Ashton and a quittance of £181 2s. 8d. paid for the same.
- (ii) Copy of a deed relating to the church at Long Ashton and lands appertaining to the same.
- (iii) A bill of £19 0s. 0d. which Martyn is to receive from Richard May, servant to Mr Thomas White, draper and late sheriff of London.
- (iv) Copy of the patent of Smyth's purchase of Ashton Merrietts and other property there.
- (v) Copy of a recognisance of £1,000 concerning woods at Ashton Merrietts.

I pray you desyre Mr. Duke to cancell or discharge the seyd recognisance

sethens that Mr. Gates have made certificate of them. Hit hath hangid this two yerres.

- (vi) Documents relating to a house and a garden in Newnham, Gloucestershire.⁶
- (vii) Instruction to Martyn to obtain a particular of the house at Newnham from Mr. Sternall, surveyor of Gloucestershire, and of the church house and land at Long Ashton from Mr. Moris surveyor of Somerset, 'give you theyr servants som what to drinck to make the seyd particulars out in a pap(er)'.
- (viii) Instruction to Martyn to obtain details of Merrietts chapel and St. James chapel with the lead upon them, and to get them included in the particular of the church house at Long Ashton.
- (ix) Instruction to Martyn to enquire if a letter and fine which Smyth sent to London by the hand of Francis Barlow, cousin of the bishop of Bath, has been delivered to Mr. Bidwell or Mr. Kelway at the Inner Temple, and if not, to obtain the letter from Barlow and either deliver it or get some other lawyer to enrol the fine. Martyn is also ordered to pay Mr. Kelway the charges of the fine out of the £19 0s. 0d. he is to receive from Richard May.⁷

¹ From internal evidence it appears that this letter was written to Robert Kelway, see footnote 7 below.

² Dr. George Owen, a Bristolian, was the Court Physician and a close friend of John Smyth. *Dictionary of National Biography*, XIV, p. 1301. J. Vanes (ed.), *The Ledger of John Smythe 1538–1550*, Bristol Record Society, XXVIII, 1974, pp. 23, 25, 27, 209, 256, 281.

³ The Choke chantry in Long Ashton parish church had been founded by Sir Richard Choke d. 1486, who was Lord Chief Justice of England. His elaborate tomb survives in the church. J. Collinson, *History of Somerset*, II, pp. 284–295; E. Green (ed.) *Somerset Chantries*, Somerset Record Society, II, 1888, pp. XIX, 93, 274.

⁴ Hugh Brooke possessed the manor of Ashton Phillips in Long Ashton parish, and lived at Lower Court until his death in 1584 when the manor was purchased by the Smyth family. The chapel which he had acquired survives adjacent to Lower Court. Christopher Kenn was lord of the nearby manor of Kenn in north Somerset, and also possessed lands and property in Long Ashton and Bedminster, including the manor of Ashton Theynes, later acquired by the Smyth family. J. Collinson, *History of Somerset*, II, pp. 284, 295–297. F.T. Colby (ed.) 'The Visitation of the County of Somerset 1623', *Harleian Society*, XI, 1876, pp. 15, 64. See also Letter 102.

⁵ Smyth's gratitude to Kelway was later shown by various gifts of wine, see J. Vanes, *op. cit.*, pp. 278, 285.

⁶ This house was part of the chantry lands at Newnham which Smyth bought in 1549 for £112 14s. 0d. The house was occupied by Smyth's friend and business partner John Spark; later Spark bought the house from Smyth for £6 0s. 0d. J. Vanes, *op. cit.*, p. 25.

⁷ Robert Kelway to whom this letter was written was a barrister at the Inner

Temple; he was also Recorder of Bristol. Robert Bidwell or Bedell was also a barrister at the Inner Temple. F.A. Inderwick (ed.), *A Calendar of the Inner Temple Records*, I, (1505–1603), 1896, *passim*.

**2. DOCUMENTS ENCLOSED WITH THE ABOVE.
NO HEADINGS OR DATES.**

- (i) Memorandum that Mr. John Smyth of Bristol, merchant, had purchased the parsonage of Long Ashton of the King in fee simple of the clear yearly value of £16 0s. 0d.
Names subscribed: Sir John Rowght, vicar, Tristram Dyllington, John Tynte, John Sachefield. *AC/C2/2*
- (ii) A list of the lands and tenements which belonged to the Choke chantry, N.D., *AC/C2/3*.
- (iii) A rental of the Choke chantry lands, N.D. *AC/C2/4*.
- (iv) A memorandum that John Smyth of Bristol, merchant, took possession the parsonage of Long Ashton and the manor of Merrietts, 22 June 1546, *AC/C2/5*.
- (v) A copy of *AC/C2/2*.

**3. WILLIAM PORTMAN¹ TO JOHN SMYTH
ORCHARD 7 JANUARY 1552**

Thanks Smyth for the carp he has sent, and assures him of continuing friendship. Reminds Smyth that he moved him at Gloucester for a marriage between one of Smyth's sons and a daughter of 'my cousin Pophams',² and confirms that Popham would welcome such a match.

for the wisdom that he knoweth in you and for the good report he heryth of your sonnes, and so would I lykewise, and for the gentle woman I dout not who so ever shall have her [she will prove]³ her very gentle and obedient.

Asks what Smyth thinks of the proposal and suggests a meeting between the parties,

and yf it be there fortune to lyke one another and your good wyll obtained I will cause her father to strayne himself for her [agreement]³.

AC/C4

¹ William Portman of Orchard was sergeant at law to Henry VIII and afterwards Lord Chief Justice. He died 1555. J. Collinson, *op. cit.*, III, pp. 274-275.

² For the relationships between the Portmans of Orchard and the Pophams of Wellington, Huntworth and elsewhere in Somerset see J. Collinson, *op. cit.* II, pp. 483f., III 71f.

³ The letter is torn and the words in brackets are difficult to read.

4. JOHN SMYTH TO DAVID BROOK¹.

HORTON 15 JULY 1552

Smyth writes concerning Mr. Bradstone² and his wife who were to appear before Brook at Horton 'to knowledge the fyne which I sent you'. Some confusion has arisen over whether Brook will see them and as to which day has been appointed, and Bradstone has reported to Smyth that Brook has refused to see him. Smyth is convinced that Bradstone is trying to deceive him, 'but peradventure he may deceave hymselfe moste of all'. Asks Brook to appoint another day and time when Bradstone and his wife shall see him and complete their business.

Endorsed: To John Smyth from David Brook at Horton 'this present Sunday in the morning'. Thanks Smyth for 'your box of marmelade'. Confirms that he is willing to see Bradstone, but states that on the previous Friday he had heard from Bradstone that his wife refused to complete the business 'for that hys wyffe wold nott doo itt untill such tyme he hadde sealyd hys wyffes livyng frome hym'.

AC/C3

¹ David Brook or Broke, sergeant at law, of Horton in south Gloucestershire was an uncle of Hugh Brooke of Long Ashton referred to in Letter 5. For other dealings between John Smyth and David Brook see J. Vanes, *op. cit.*, pp. 252, 308. See also *D.N.B.* VI, pp. 414-415; Fuller's *Worthies* II, p. 283.

² Robert Bradstone of Winterbourne sold several pieces of land in south Gloucestershire to Smyth during the years 1552-1556. B.R.O. AC/D3/35-52; P.R.O. Feet of Fines CP25(2) 57/426, ff. 40, 54.

5. GILES DAUBENY TO JOHN SMITH AT BRISTOL

WAYFORD [SOMERSET] 13 JANUARY [1553]¹

Daubeny refers to Smyth's purchase of the manor of Long Ashton,

and claims the right to an annuity of 53s. 4d. a year to be paid during his lifetime out of the manor. Asks that the annuity should be paid and threatens legal action in case of refusal.

Endorsed is a copy of the patent dated 6 March 1510 by which Daubeney claims the annuity.

AC/C1/1

¹ John Smyth acquired the manor of Long Ashton from Sir Thomas Arundell in 1545 (B.R.O. AC/D1/143–149), but this letter was apparently written about eight years later, (see Letters 3 and 4).

The Daubeney family had been a prominent landowning family in Somerset since the thirteenth century, with lands at South Petherton, Barrington and in other parts of the county. Sir Thomas Arundell acquired Long Ashton from Henry Daubeney Earl of Bridgwater. Victoria County History, *Somerset*, IV, pp. 70, 111–112, 176. J. Collinson, *The History and Antiquities of the County of Somerset* (Bath 1791), II, p. 292.

**6. JOHN SMYTH TO GILES DAUBENY
COPY OF ANSWER TO THE ABOVE LETTER; NO DATE,
HEADING OR ADDRESS.**

Agrees that Daubeney is entitled to the annuity he claims, but points out that the manor was sold by Sir Thomas Arundell, clear of all annuities, and that

‘Agaynst me the said Sir Thomas was bound in a statute of £1,500 of which statute I cannot take advantage except the annuitie or rent which is demanded be recovered by action’.

Therefore desires Daubeney to proceed at law, ‘wishing that you would not thinke I doe this ether for troble his sake or for that I find fault with your title’, but that only in this way can he claim against the estate of Sir Thomas Arundell. Hopes Daubeney will take this answer in good part, and if he does otherwise, ‘you shall understand my meaning amyss as knows the God to whose tuition I commend you.’

AC/C1/2

**7. JOHN SMYTH TO THE POSSESSOR OF THE MANOR OF
THORNTON.¹
COPY OF LETTER WRITTEN FROM BRISTOL; NO DATE
OR HEADING**

Smyth understands that the manor of Thornton is escheated to the

recipient of this letter by the attainder of Sir Thomas Arundell,² and writes to inform him that about eight years previously the writer had purchased the manor of Long Ashton from Sir Thomas, and that Sir Thomas bound himself in a statute of £1,500 that the manor was free of all annuities and rents. Now Giles Daubeney claims an annuity of 53s. 4d. granted to him by Lord Daubeney formerly lord of the manor of Long Ashton. If Giles Daubeney proceeds at law and distrains for his annuity, the statute for £1,500 will be forfeit to Smyth and will be executed upon the lands escheated to the recipient of this letter because Sir Thomas Arundell formerly possessed them.

‘And although I know right well that it sholde be a greate profit or gaine for me so to do yet because my conscius will not consente to use the oportunitie or rigor of the lawe in this matar as also partly for the avoydinge of troble, if you can agree with master Daubeney that I may have no more of this matar, I shall be willing and contented with the same.’

Counsels the recipient to deal with Daubeney with all possible speed.

AC/C1/3

¹ The manor of Thornton in the parish of Marnhull, Dorset, had been purchased by Sir Thomas Arundell c. 1530. The lands there were later held by the Rogers family of Bryanston, Dorset, and this letter was probably written to Sir John Rogers (d. 1565), see Letter 4. J. Hutchins, *The History and Antiquities of the County of Dorset*, 3rd Ed., 1861–70, I, pp. 250–251, IV, p. 318.

² Sir Thomas Arundell was executed 26 February 1552 for alleged conspiracy against the Duke of Somerset. Victoria County History, *Somerset*, IV, p. 176. *Dictionary of National Biography*, II, p. 148.

8. JOHN ROGERS TO JOHN SMYTH AT BRISTOL

13 MARCH 1553

Thanks Smyth for his favour concerning the statute of which he has the execution upon the manor of Thornton, but states that he has not yet received possession of the manor from the Crown nor any profit from it, since the Crown has the first year's profits. But because he hopes to have the profits of the manor thereafter, ‘I wyll discharge you of the said annuitie yf I oghte to alowe the same . . .’. Alternatively Rogers undertakes to repay Smyth if Daubeney distrains upon him for the annuity.

AC/C1/4

9. Included with the above letter and numbered AC/C1/5-7 are various documents relating to the estate at Long Ashton purchased by John Smyth in 1545, including an account of the descent of the manor, a note of charges and annuities payable and a rental of 1545.

**10. GEORGE OWEN¹ TO JOHN SMYTH AT BRISTOL
'AT COURT' 9 MARCH 1554**

Owen has sent his servant to Mr. Carew² with £40 and with a release of all actions against Smyth's two sons, and Carew is also to seal a bond of £100 not to pick any quarrel with Smyth's sons in future and similarly they are to agree not to quarrel with Carew.

'I am as glad that the matter is broght to a good pass for your quyete and for your ij sons safty as you yourself, and for God sake give them advyse to be ware of such lyk myschauncys for there is no man so strong nor so hardy butt he may meet with hys mache.'

Owen's servant, Martyn, is coming to Bristol to buy sack that Owen is to give to the Queen when she goes to Oxford. He notes that with £60 received from one John Twylt and £40 paid to Mr. Carew he still remains in Smyth's debt for £200, 'besydes your fyne for Keynsham', and asks Smyth's forbearance for a little longer. Sends news that the Lord Privy Seal and others are going in the next week to fetch the Prince of Spain,

'God send him well to arryve here and send us peace . . . We are lyke to fall owtt with the french God send us well all to do'.

Postscript

Informs Smyth that Carew has come to him at dinner and that Carew has accepted the £40 and sealed the release. Smyth's sons must now sign a similar obligation.

'Now it ys done I wool say to you I had never so much to do for any on matters in my lyff.'

AC/C5

¹ George Owen was the Court Physician and a close friend of John Smyth, see Introduction and Letter 1 note 2.

² The occasion of this quarrel involving Smyth's two sons Hugh and Matthew who were both at the Inns of Court at that time does not appear, nor is there any clear indication of the identity of Mr. Carew. For a discussion of this see Introduction and J.H. Bettey, *The Rise of a Gentry Family: The Smyths of Ashton Court c. 1500-1642*, Bristol Branch of the Historical Association, 1978, pp. 7-9.

11. JOHN HIPPISELEY TO HUGH SMYTH**CAMELEY 16 DECEMBER 1559**

Thanks Smyth for his last letter; regrets that he has had no chance to speak with the man Smyth wrote to him about, but asks Smyth to come to Cameley.

AC/C6

¹ Like the Smyths, the Hippisleys had acquired much of their estate from former monastic land, including the manor of Ston Easton, near their house at Cameley, which had formerly belonged to the Augustinian priory at Bruton. See F.T. Colby (ed.) *Visitation of Somerset 1623*, *Harleian Society*, XI, 1876, p. 52; J. Collinson, *op. cit.*, II, pp. 125, 155.

12. THE PRIVY COUNCIL TO THE MAYOR OF BRISTOL**WINDSOR 20 JANUARY 1564¹.**

The Council has been informed 'by your letters and suche examynacons as have ben of late taken by you and others' that Hugh Smyth and Matthew Smyth of Bristol have misbehaved themselves towards 'Mr. Gorge the Quenes Majesties servaunt having ben sent into those partes for the Quenes Majesties service'.² Such behaviour cannot be allowed, and the Mayor is required to arrest Hugh and Matthew Smyth and to require them to appear before the Council within ten days. If they are no longer within the Mayor's jurisdiction he is to show the letter to the Sheriff of whatever county they are in so that he may arrest them, 'wherof fayle you not as you tender hyr Majesties' favour'.

Signed by: F. Bedford
 The Earl of Pembroke
 R. Dudley
 E. Clinton
 W. Howard
 E. Rogers
 F. Knollys
 W. Cecil
 W. Petre
 R. Sackville

AC/C7/1

¹ Note endorsed that the letter was received in Bristol at 3 p.m. 29 January 1564.

² No further details concerning Mr. Gorge or the nature of the Smyths' offence

have been found, but the two brothers met in London and were presumably able to make their peace with the Privy Council, B.R.O. AC/F7/1-3. The Privy Council considered the matter on 7 May 1564, but apparently decided to take no action, 'The mater between William Gorge and the Smithes herd, but nothing don'. *Acts of the Privy Council*, New Series, VII, 1558-1570, (1893), p. 144.

13. EDWARD ST LOE¹. TO HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON COURT

STANTON DREW 1564

Writes in haste 'this present night at one of the cloke' to send Smyth copies of the letters of the Mayor and Sheriff ordering Smyth's arrest 'which came into my hands synce mydnyght'. Wishes urgently to know what Smyth would have him do on his behalf.
Endorsed 'haste hast'.

AC/C7/2

¹ Edward St Loe of Stanton Drew was a member of a younger branch of the ancient Somerset family from Newton St Loe. During the reign of Edward VI he had leased the manor of Whitchurch which was later acquired by the Smyth family. See J. Collinson, *op. cit.*, II, p. 441.

14. HUGH SMYTH TO MATTHEW SMYTH 'AT HERTFORD OR LONDON'

'MR UPTON'S HOUSE' 30 JANUARY 1564

Writes to inform Matthew of the Privy Council's instructions to the Mayor and Sheriff, and sends copies of the letters. Although 'Mr. Shyryfe wold lett me have any respyte that I wold', nonetheless desires Matthew to meet him at Colebrook on Monday, 7 February together with 'my cosen Wynter'¹ so that they may consider what to do. Hopes to use Winter's help and influence with his friends

'we shall have great occasion to use him for that it seemeth by the rygourouse letters that the counsaile is very much insensyd'.

Notes that Mr. Horner² has offered his help, and that Hugh proposes also to call upon Sir Maurice Berkeley³ and ask for letters. He proposes to set out on the following Saturday

'the hyeway from Brystoll to London and so to meat with you at Colebroke at the day appoynted except you send this bearer to meat with me by the way for to have me come to any other place'.

The letter is written 'from Mr. Upton's house where I mett Mr Shyryfe'.

AC/C7/3

¹ George Winter (d. 1581) of Dyrham, south Gloucestershire, was the brother of Sir William Winter of Lydney, the admiral. He was related to the Smyths through his wife's family the Morgans of Llantarnam. *D.N.B.* LXII, pp. 220–222; S. Rudder, *History of Gloucestershire*, 1779, I, pp. 428–429.

² Sir John Horner of Cloford near Frome had been sheriff of Somerset in the previous year 1563–64. J. Collinson, *History of Somerset*, 1791, II, p. 463.

³ Sir Maurice Berkeley of Bruton, standard bearer to Henry VIII, Edward VI and Elizabeth. Died 1581. He was sheriff of Somerset in 1567. J. Collinson, *op. cit.*, III, p. 280.

15. THOMAS SILKE 'PRIEST'¹ TO HUGH SMYTH AT LONG ASHTON

1565

Sends commendations to Smyth and his family. States that he has been in great distress because of the plague 'Here I have ben in a woffull tyme as ever I was in (I thanke God of all)'. In answer to Smyth's letter states that the house of St. Augustines was suppressed 7 December 1539, and that Abbot Burton died 30 June 1539, so that Abbot Morgan was head of the house for only five months. Does not know when Morgan died 'for he departed in Walys I thinke, Mr. George Jenys can tell the tyme . . .'. As for the canons he thinks one is alive near London whose name is William Freeman. 'Other thyngs I know nott, I thinke all there servants be dead. Mr Lawrence of Barkley and his father was auditor there.'²

AC/C8

¹ Thomas Silke was vicar of the church of St Leonard in Bristol. S. Seyer, *Memoirs of Bristol*, 1823, II, pp. 222–223; see also A.B. Emden, *Biographical Dictionary of the University of Oxford*, 1501–1540, 1974, p. 552.

² According to V.C.H. *Gloucestershire*, II, 1907, pp. 78–79, Abbot Burton died in 1537 and the last abbot, Morgan ap Gwilliam assumed his office in that year. For a transcript of the last abbot's will and a brief discussion of his career after the dissolution see G. Baskville, 'Some Ecclesiastical Wills' *Bristol and Gloucestershire Archaeological Society Transactions*, LII, 1930, pp. 281–84.

**16. GEORGE WINTER TO HUGH SMYTH AT LONG ASHTON
LONDON 24 FEBRUARY 1569**

Writes that he has been to see Mr. Baptist Fortune¹ who has promised that Smyth's armour shall be finished very shortly.

AC/C9

¹ Baptist Fortune or Fortuni was a member of a family of Florentines living in London, *Acts of the Privy Council*, New Series, VIII, 1571–1575, (1894), pp. 41–42.

**17. JOHN POPHAM¹ TO HUGH SMYTH AT LONG ASHTON
WELLINGTON 3 OCTOBER 1570**

Sends documents concerning a lease for Mr. Shepard and asks Smyth to make out the lease and rent charge. Enquires after Mr. Winter and Matthew Smyth. Suggests that the documents may be returned by 'the fysshers that use Brystoll who dwell at Wellyngton'.²

AC/C10

¹ Sir John Popham (1531–1607), an eminent lawyer, was Recorder and M.P. for Bristol 1571–1583, Speaker of the House of Commons 1580, and later Lord Chief Justice. His mansion was at Wellington in Somerset. *D.N.B.* XLVI, pp. 146–149. See also Letter 42.

² The meaning of this phrase is not clear, but it presumably refers to men from Wellington who came to Bristol for fish.

**18. GEORGE NORTON¹ TO HUGH SMYTH AT LONG
ASHTON**

13 OCTOBER 1570

Refers to the fact that they have agreed to be friends and 'for my parte there shalbe no occasyon willinge of breche'. Therefore he sends Smyth 'such newys as I recevyd this morning out of Walys'.

AC/C11

¹ Sir George Norton of Abbots Leigh. J. Collinson, *op. cit.* III, p. 153.

19. HENRY LEWIS TO SIR GEORGE NORTON**BEDMINSTER 5 OCTOBER 1572**

Refers to business at the Assizes and asks for Norton's help. States that he has had a writ directed to the coroner Mr. William Gorge, and has retained Mr. Baker of Bedminster to be his counsel. Asks Norton to speak on his behalf,

'I com not to your worshipp myself because I would avoid suspycyon, for my adversaries doo thinke that the Mone wyll sowner fawll downe from her Sphere than that I will take this matter in hand agayne'.

*AC/C12***20. SIR JOHN HORNER TO MATTHEW SMYTH AT LONG ASHTON****CLOFORD 16 NOVEMBER 1573**

Writes to tell Smyth that he fears 'the badd office of the sherifwyke is like to fawle uppon me, if it be so there is not Remedy'.¹ Sends commendations to Smyth and all his other friends.

AC/C13/1

¹ Sir John Horner of Cloford near Frome had been Sheriff for Somerset during the years 1563-64 and, as he feared, was again chosen for the years 1573-74. J. Collinson, *History of Somerset*, 1791, II, p. 463.

21. JOHN SAINTLEGER¹ TO MATTHEW SMYTH AT THE MIDDLE TEMPLE**CANONLEIGH² 21 APRIL 1575**

Asks for time for repayment of a debt because of the many troubles he has had.

AC/C14

¹ Sir John St Leger of Devon and his son, John, were both in debt to Matthew Smyth, see B.R.O. AC/D 7/22.

² Matthew Smyth possessed an estate in Essex near Canonleigh, B.R.O. 36074/2.

22. HUGH SMYTH TO MATTHEW SMYTH

LONG ASHTON 24 JUNE 1576

After hearty commendations, Hugh Smyth writes to inform his brother that he has dealt with the sheriff concerning the jury in the case between Williams and Searle, and has received fair promises, especially from Thomas Key, the under-sheriff. He has given Key a list of the jurymen he would like, and by Key's advice has included Stradling and Wadham, in order that the jury may seem to be favourably returned by the other side. All the rest of the names he has suggested for the jury are men he can be assured of. Key has promised not to alter any of them unless he is greatly urged to do so, and not to include other names before showing them to Matthew Smyth 'and yf you myslyke with any such they shall not be returned'. Asks Matthew Smyth to inform Popham and Curle of the business, since they can 'gesse at thaffection of the most part of the shyre'. He is particularly concerned about the attitude of the Wadhams, Portmans, Stowell, Rodney, the Nortons and Walton of Shapwick.

Asks his brother's opinion concerning a lease which had previously belonged to one Cradock, and before that to 'Old Popley', who had bought it from 'Copes his wife of Kelston' who had been left it in the will of one Davies. Also informs his brother that he has been negotiating with Mr. —, 'the surveyor of the lands of Thomas Buckland of Harptree,² over a suit for a mill.

AC/C18/1

¹ Illegible.

² For the Buckland family of West Harptree see J. Collinson, *op. cit.*, II, pp. 141–143. S.R.O. DD/SAS (C 1193) 5/1 pp. 189–190. See also Letter 315 Note 2.

**23. GEORGE NORTON, JOHN YOUNG, H. NEWTON,
CHRISTOPHER KENNE AND SAMUEL NORTON TO THE
LORDS OF THE PRIVY COUNCIL**

COPY; ABBOTS LEIGH 8 MAY 1578¹

Informs the Council of the great disorders and trouble caused by Hugh Smyth as a Justice of the Peace in the county of Somerset. Hitherto the writers have kept silent hoping that Smyth would reform but they now feel compelled to complain to the Council because of the intolerable abuses committed by Smyth. They ask that he should be dismissed as a Justice, and remind the Council

that he has already been put out of the Quorum. List of complaints appended as follows:

- (i) That although complaints have already been sent to the Council about Hugh Smyth's 'quarrells, disorders and uncomelie speaches' and he was commanded to reform himself, yet since then he has been worse than before.
- (ii) That Smyth had exported wheat contrary to the law; and that on the return of the captain of the ship by which he had exported the grain, Smyth used his authority as a Justie to set the man in the stocks until he agreed to pay double the price he had received for the cargo.
- (iii) That Smyth had refused to pay his proportionate share towards the training of soldiers according to the Queen's commission, 'to th'incouragement of inferior obstinate persons to do the like'.
- (iv) That he had been guilty of various irregularities in licensing alehouses, and
 'that he licensed an Alehouse in a place nere to a Woode side voide of neyghbours wher the same is more fitter to retayne theves and kepe filthie rule than for any other good consideration'.
- (v) That when Sir George Norton and Sir John Young attempted to reform some of his abuses, Smyth abused them calling them 'a tosspot beaste, a dronken knave etc. . . .'
- (vi) That Smyth harboured a gang of disorderly ruffians who assaulted and terrified his neighbours 'and disquietethe the Citie of Bristowe with divers routs'.

Included also is a statement from William Davis of St. George in the county of Somerset, mariner, made before Sir George Norton and Samuel Norton, justices of the peace, 25 September 1577, in the presence of Edward Lukener, Oliver Bottrell and Edward Davis alias Singer. In his statement Davis relates in detail the complaint made in (ii) above, that he had sold wheat on Smyth's behalf in Lisbon and St. Lucas, and that on his return he had been compelled by violence and threats from Smyth and his retainers to hand over more than he had received for the wheat. Smyth had threatened

'to send him away to the gayle, except he would give £8 0s. 0d. in redy money which he did for feare. And that was more than he sold it for by £3 10s. 0d. And then Mr. Smythe charged him he should not disclose the deallings passed betweene them to any other Justice'.

AC/C16

¹ For further references to this matter see *Acts of the Privy Council, 1577-1578*, pp. 230, 232, 248.

**24. GEORGE MORGAN¹ TO MATTHEW SMYTH AT
REDCROSS STREET, LONDON**

PENTREKE² 31 JANUARY 1579

Thanks Smyth for 'your great favour and goodness towards my Sonne which I beseche God to enhable hym with fidelitie and duetie to deserve'. Asks Smyth to accept 'this little remembrance of my good will, namelie to your self, a flytche of bacon and vi small cheses, to Mrs. Smith a case of corse Trenchers'.

AC/C15

¹ George Morgan was related to the Smyths through the marriage of Hugh Smyth's only daughter to Edward Morgan of Llantarnam, Monmouthshire. J. Collinson, *op. cit.*, II, p. 292; *Harleian Society* XI, 1876, p. 101; G.T. Clarke, *The Genealogies of Morgan and Glamorgan*, 1886, pp. 322–323. See also B.R.O. AC/S 2/1–2.

² Possibly Pentyrch in Glamorganshire.

25. JOHN HORNER TO HUGH SMYTH

8 MAY 1579

Sends Smyth a warrant and a list of jurymen, and makes other reference to legal business at Quarter Sessions. Very sorry to hear of Smyth's illness.

AC/C13/2

**26. JOHN HORNER TO THE LORD TREASURER OF
ENGLAND (COPY)**

14 JUNE 1579

Testifies to the character of Clement Alvyn against whom accusations have been made to the Lord Treasurer. States that he has known Alvyn for forty years and that he is 'a trewe, honest, playne man in his deallinge'.¹

AC/C13/11

¹ The Lord Treasurer was William Cecil. This letter is apparently a contemporary copy sent to Smyth for information. It is not in the same hand as the other letters from Horner.

27. HUGH SMYTH TO MATTHEW SMYTH AT THE MIDDLE TEMPLE**LONG ASHTON 28 JUNE 1579**

Has received Matthew Smyth's letter by the vicar of Portbury, and is distressed to know that

'... it is bruted¹ that I am like to dye, I suppose some that wysch hit to be so hath gevyn out the brute, I trust to deceave theym for this tyme, for I feel now some amendment . . . '.

Refers to an illegal enclosure he is alleged to have made in Leasewood,² and assures his brother that all that has happened is that the shepherd Robert Sanders found eight rails down and set them up again, and that no cattle got in neither did anyone complain about it at the time.

AC/C18/2

¹ rumoured.

² Leasewood was part of Hugh Smyth's estate in Whitchurch.

28. HUGH SMYTH TO MATTHEW SMYTH**LONG ASHTON 6 JULY 1579**

Writes concerning his brother's proposals over lands at Filton, Bishopworth and the rest he has written about; he is content to accept these proposals and the names of those he has suggested as witnesses. Hopes that the business may be done in the Michaelmas term 'when I wyll by God's grace be there, but doe therein as you think good'.

Hopes soon to see him at Ashton Court and will send 'as many nagges as you will', to fetch him.

*AC/C18/3***29. GEORGE NORTON TO SIR MAURICE BERKELEY, SIR JOHN HORNER, MR COLLE, SHERIFF, AND MR SYDENHAM****ABBOTS LEIGH 25 SEPTEMBER 1579**

Having heard that the four men are at Ashton Court, and fearing that Hugh Smyth will seek to deceive them, Norton writes to tell them the true story of what has happened, exhorting them to

beware of Smyth's lies and persuasions and to deal indifferently and justly in the matter. On the previous Friday night, 18 September 1579, there came into Norton's warren an unknown number of armed hunters, who began to catch the rabbits. They were found by Norton's warrener and his shepherd, and a fight ensued. In the fight the shepherd was attacked by three men and was struck senseless to the ground

'haveinge byn slayne had not he byn the better skulled, who after he was downe and wounded, they bounde hym with his owne bowe stringe and with his owne garters, and beate him in such sorte that none woulde judge that ever he shoulde escape with lyef, and truly if he had not byn the better loked unto, for the avoydinge of his brused bludde, he had died'.

Meanwhile the warrener, being set upon by two of the poachers, fired an arrow which hit one of them, who fell to the ground crying out to his companions for help. The poachers thereupon retreated, taking the wounded man with them on a horse. Norton's warrener thinking that he had killed the man, and unable to find his companion, the shepherd, in the darkness, went immediately to the house of Thomas Roche to seek help. The warrener and Roche then set out to look for the wounded man and for the shepherd. On the way they met the shepherd who had regained consciousness and freed himself, and then in the dark Thomas Roche 'stumbled at the hurte man's skull [cap], and toke it upp beinge then as they gest betweene two and three of the clock after midnight'. The three men then came to Sir George Norton's house, and he was roused and told what had happened. He ordered his men to send for the keeper and his hounds and to follow the trail of the poachers. Early in the morning, the hounds followed the scent almost to Sir Hugh Smyth's Lodge,

'where the hounds fyndinge of a hare in the high waye, would drawe no farther, and so they returned homeward, havinge all the waye outward drawne uppon the furrowe of an horse with a man of eche syde, the grounde beinge verye dewye'.

Later, in the place where the fight had taken place, they found a staff, a rabbit newly-taken, a piece of the arrow which had broken off as the man fell, and hay staves 'all colored redd with the stayne of Ayshton soyle'.

Sir George Norton then sent for the constable, John Moore, and ordered him to make a search at Ashton for Sir Hugh Smyth's warrener or any other man that was hurt, but when the constable got to Ashton Court, Hugh Smyth would not allow him to make any search. Norton also sent for the blacksmith of Ashton who confirmed that the staff which had been found in the warren was part of the pike which he had made for John Blanche

‘the man that was wounded and is now deade, slayne by my man in my warren, in his owne defence, whose death he both confesseth, shall and will justifie’.

Sir George Norton and his son (Samuel Norton) had therefore taken sureties of their warrener to appear to answer any charges that might be made and to justify what he had done.

‘Thus have I shewed you the whole matter as it is, as also my dealinge herein, as I will answer, hoping and requyryng you also that you will no farther intermeddle herein, than to the equitye of the cause and justice shall apperteyne.’¹

AC/C17/1

¹ For further details of this incident see *Acts of the Privy Council* 1578–1580, p. 292. B.R.O. AC/F1/4; 36074/68; 36074/1a–b.

30. HUGH SMYTH TO MATTHEW SMYTH

LONG ASHTON 11 OCTOBER 1579

Hugh Smyth writes that he has sent by the bearer, John Prickett, £100 towards the payment of Mr. Downing.

‘I perceave my bad tenants of Whitchurch are rydding upp, I pray you lett that matter be harkenyd unto, and yf my lord treasurer contynew his sharpnes then I pray you move my lord chamberlayne to mytigate hym untill my comyng, which truly cannot be hastely for I am shrewdly trobeleyd at this present with lameness and can eat nothing but eggs . . .’

He has sent Shepherd to answer the information in the Exchequer.

AC/C18/4

31. THOMAS WILSON¹ TO MATTHEW SMYTH AT

REDCROSSE STREET, THE BARBICAN, LONDON

‘AT THE COURT IN GREENWICH’ 22 OCTOBER 1579

Writes to inform his ‘cosyn Smythe’ that on the previous day George Norton had appealed to the Lord Chancellor not to accept the verdict of a jury at the Coroner’s court ‘touching the death at your brother’s warren’ because the jury would not be impartial but would find it to be wilful murder, but that instead the matter might be referred to the Justices of Assize. Wilson had suggested that Matthew Smyth might be called before the Star Chamber to say what he knew about the incident, ‘therefore you shall do well to

show yourselfe'. In the meantime he asks Smyth to inform the Lord Chancellor and also the Lord Chamberlain 'your brother's good frynde' of the whole matter.

Wilson also asks Smyth to inform his brother (in-law) George Winter that it is essential that he bring his son John Winter before the Council

'for that her Majestie hath taken the cause to herselfe, and finding herselfe touched in honour, myneth to geave oute that he shalbe more sorelie dealte withal than he hath benn, yea I feare he shallbe committed to a moste grevouse pryson'.²

AC/C17/2

¹ Thomas Wilson 1525-1581, Secretary of State to Queen Elizabeth, who married as his second wife Agnes, daughter of John Winter of Lydney, Gloucestershire, sister if Sir William Winter, the admiral and of George Winter of Dyrham. *D.N.B.* LXII, pp. 132-135, 220-222.

² This is a reference to the fact that George Winter had stood surety for his son John Winter who was 'charged before their Lordships with some matter of misdemeanure at the seas and by them commanded for the answering thereof to appeare before their Lordships . . . (and) did contemptuously absent himself'. *Acts of the Privy Council*, New Series XI, 1578-1580, (1895), pp. 225, 260, 283, 293.

32. JOHN EDWARD¹ TO HUGH SMYTH AT LONG ASHTON WELLS 21 NOVEMBER 1579

Sends Smyth a copy of the letter from the Privy Council to him as Coroner, dated 25 October 1579.

The Privy Council instructs the Coroner that whereas he has empanelled a jury to enquire into the death of John Blanche servant to Hugh Smyth wounded by a servant of Sir George Norton, it has been decided that the sundry persons shall be more thoroughly examined in London. Therefore the Coroner is ordered not to proceed to a verdict in the case until he is further directed by the Council.

The original letter was signed by the Lord Chancellor, Lord Burleigh, the Earl of Lincoln, Lord Hunsdon, Sir Francis Knollys, Sir James Agose, Sir Christopher Hatton, Thomas Wilson and Secretary Walsingham, and was brought to the Coroner by one of Sir George Norton's men.

AC/C17/3

¹ John Edward was Coroner of the county of Somerset. This letter is quoted in *Acts of the Privy Council*, New Series, XI, p. 292, see also *ibid.*, pp. 578-580.

33. GEORGE WINTER TO MATTHEW SMYTH

DYRHAM 25 APRIL 1580

Asks Matthew's advice in a quarrel he has had with Sir Nicholas Poyntz¹ who he says has falsely complained about him to the Privy Council.

Sends copies of letters written to Mr. Secretary Wilson and of a letter from Sir Nicholas Poyntz to Mr. Thomas Ivey. 'I praye you gyve credyt and your good advyce good cossen'. Hopes that Matthew's brother has recovered his health, 'I have byn with hym three times senc my commyng hethere'.

AC/C19/1

¹ Sir Nicholas Poyntz of Iron Acton, south Gloucestershire. *Harleian Society*, XXI, (1885), pp. 130-135; S. Rudder, *History of Gloucestershire*, 1779, pp. 214-215.

34. HUGH SMYTH TO MATTHEW SMYTH

LONG ASHTON 28 APRIL 1580

The bearer of the letter, Thomas Askey of Clapton, has come into the possession of a good portion of land by the death of one Rippe of Thornbury. Asks Matthew to help and advise him so that Mr. Cash may obtain for him letters from the Lord Treasurer to the sheriff to return an indifferent jury,

'he hath over slypped time and hath delt with James Bisse (whose honestye I suspect) I pray you dyrect hym to some good counsayle, as chiefly to Mr. Solycytor and to Mr. Ash . . .'

Wishes the special commissioners to enquire into the matter to be William Morgan of Llantarnam, Richard Bassett and himself, 'in Gloucestershire there is none that he may trust'.

35. HUGH SMYTH TO MATTHEW SMYTH

LONG ASHTON 29 APRIL 1580

Matthew Smyth's man, Robert Tippet, has served Horte and Hunt

with writs from Star Chamber, but the others named in the writ are fled and cannot be found.

‘Hitchcocke and Haimes your Tennants have promised on pain of 40 shillings to be sett upon Tippet in Bradstones Leete that Tippet shall pull downe the said walle betweene this and Michaelmas. Therefore hit behoveth you to use some sharpe dealinge in this cause, otherwaies you shalbe over ruled by a [crowd?]¹ of knaves.’

Thinks that Mr. Seymour and Bradstone are conspiring together against Matthew Smyth.

AC/C18/6

¹ Word illegible in MS.

**36. HUGH SMYTH TO MATTHEW SMYTH IN LONDON
LONG ASHTON 9 MAY 1580**

Has received his letter by his cosen Thomas Arthur,¹ and has sent a letter to Richard Berkeley, who has replied by the messenger Thomas Farmer ‘my butler’ that

‘he wold doe you any pleasure that lay in hym to doe but he could not make his resolute awnsere to the contents of your letters untill Whitsontyd because his sonne in law Mr. Throgmarten and Frannys Denys wold not be returned from London tyll then, to whom he had commytted order to deale for hym in this case . . .’

AC/C18/7

¹ See Letter 82 note 1.

**37. RICHARD BASSETT TO MATTHEW SMYTH AT THE
MIDDLE TEMPLE
10 MAY 1580**

Thanks Smyth for his many courtesies. Returns £5 which Smyth had lent him and asks for the return or cancellation of his obligation.

‘I was arrestyde by the procuremente of Walter Denys the day that I tooke my leave from you, but I shyfted my self from them into the mydell temple, so that he myste his purpose, but by the shyfte I loste my cloke . . .’

AC/C33

38. GEORGE WINTER TO MATTHEW SMYTH**DYRHAM 16 MAY 1580**

Has received his good advice concerning Sir Nicholas Poyntz. Proposes to come to London soon after Whitsun and will discuss the matter further. Asks for Matthew's help in legal business over lands at Hinton.

AC/C19/2

39. HUGH SMYTH TO MATTHEW SMYTH IN LONDON.**LONG ASHTON 30 MAY 1580**

Has sent him Mr. Barkeley's letter enclosed in one of his own by a servant of Mr. Carrs of Bristol.¹

'I am now fully resolvyd to be a Londyner as well to folow my causes as also for my better health, and doe perceave that Mr. Basshes howse at Pye Corner is to be had mychaelmas next as hymself told Curle, and sayed that he was wyllyng that I should have hit, for which I wold have made suyte my sealf yf he had comen to Bath, now I am to pray you to deale with him for me and to make such a bargayne with hym as you thinke good, and that I may know the rent, the terme and the Income that must be annsweryd, also I wold be glad to know what roomes be in the howse and what implements I shall need to provyde and whether any of the romes be wayneskotted.'²

Encloses a letter for Mr. Bashes which he asks shall be delivered.

Reports the common belief that 'sergyant babo's'³ wife is with child by one of the sergeants clerks,

'and so by lyke there wylbe a maryng, and as I have herd when she maryeth the dysposytion of the lease of Chew is in the Master of the Rowles hands to the use of the sergyaunts chyl dren . . .'

Suggests that Mr. Downyng may get part of the lands for some of his friends.

Postscript:

'I received the letter herinclosed even as I was wryting this letter which I thought good to send you that you may perceave the shyryfes devotion towards me. I have allwayes found hym my frynd and so I dowbt not but that I shall doe now. I sent Curle yesterday to meet hym at Tawnton sessyons for this same purpose. I pray you lett me know when the *venire facias* is out that I may send agayne to remember hym. My special request to hym is to returne the Jury hym sealf and that none of his deputies may deale in hit.'

AC/C18/8

¹ John Carr d. 1596 was the founder of Queen Elizabeth's Hospital in Bristol, the elder son of Alderman William Carr, merchant and soap-maker of Bristol. J. Latimer, *Sixteenth Century Bristol*, 1908, pp. 82–83.

² Hugh Smyth duly purchased a lease of the house at Pye Corner and took up residence there early in 1581. He died there on 2 March 1581.

³ This is a reference to Edward Baber, sergeant at law, who possessed an estate at Chew Magna.

40. HUGH SMYTH TO MATTHEW SMYTH

LONG ASHTON 2 JUNE 1580

Sends enclosed a copy of the judgement of wilful murder found at the sessions held at Taunton on the previous Tuesday against Thomas Frear for murdering John Blanche in Sir George Norton's warren.

'This matter hath beene past of as a thing of no moment. The Nortons fyrst as you know wold not lett Sir Morrys Barkeley and John Horner the Shyryfe and Mr. Sydneham examyne the matter but wold needs and dyd deale as they lysted theym sealfes with theyre complyces. They procuryd letters from the Starre Chamber to the Coroner that he mought not proceed, they bound the partie to appeare at the gayle delyvery without byndyng any to geve evydence agaynst hym. No man folowed the cause by meanes of my syckness and so they, knowing he had kylled the man, gott hym to be dyscharged by proclamation without any indyctment preferred or cause openyd, have received hym, abetted hym and comforted hym ever syns agaynst th'oth of Justyceshippe yf hit maketh theym not accessaries for which consyderations I meane to exhybyt a byll agaynst theym in the Starre Chamber this next mychaelmas term at my coming up. My desyre is and doe most earnestly pray you to send a wryt to remove the sayd Indytement into the Kyng's Bench, for divers considerations, first because I have noted great corruption in the Cheafe Barron, next because I suspect he is alyenated from me, and lastly because he wylbe led as pleaseth the Lord Cobham. Therefore I wold not have hym to be a Judg in any cause that may concern me. I hope to fynd indyfferency in the kyngs bentch, there I shalbe sure to have the Queen's counsayle in law to sett out the matter, I shalbe also theare mysealf to folow the cause (lying theare as I am resolvyd to doe) I shall trouble and charge my adversaries the more to come up for defence of them sealf, so every way hit wylbe best for me.'

Intends to attempt to get Frear arrested hoping that the Nortons will attempt to protect him and thus implicate themselves. Asks for Matthew's advice on how Blanch's brother may best proceed against the murderer of his brother.

AC/C18/9

41. HUGH SMYTH TO MATTHEW SMYTH**LONG ASHTON 12 JUNE 1580**

Has sent the bearer Robert Blanch, brother and heir of John Blanch, to Matthew to carry on the proceedings against Thomas Frear. Blanch's father has given him 40 shillings towards the costs.

'The poore old man is very vehement in this case and wylle spend all his abylytie in hit.'

Hugh claims that he can prove that Sir George Norton and his son Samuel have helped Frear to escape.

*AC/C18/10***42. JOHN POPHAM TO MATTHEW SMYTH****AT SEA' 4 SEPTEMBER 1580**

'Mr Smythe I have perused the whole Bookes consernyng your Brother's cause, and do fynd only Thomas Kew surely touched. For the rest ther be some fowle matter to touche them yet ys hyt eyther such as ys pardoned or such as they do co[nsid]erably excuse, but good ther now be done in hyt unless hyt be donne in London wher Sir Amys Poulett wylbe the beginning of the terme. The other syde make somewhat strang(e) of hyt what encorragment so ever they have, and surely I thyncke your Brother wylbe resonable, his credytt being savd in hytt. The perusing of the Books being very long, with some other disorder of dyet in myself, brought me into my old greyff, which was very lyke to have cost me my lyffe, and are not yet very perfectly amended, but yet resonably well agayn, I thanke God for hyt. I have made my wyll which I carry with me in my capssyll [?] and do not dowbt but what so ever God's wyll shalbe to do with me you wyll bothe advyse and help with your counsell to the excusyon thereof. I have a demerrer in law for the Bishoppe of London to be argued the second Saterday this next terme, trewly I fynd my Body so Inclynable to my Gryff of the wynd in my stomacke as I dare not as yet deal with hytt, but I pray you yf you se my L. Bishoppe lett hym know that I forgett hyt not, but wyll yf I fynd my selff apt for hyt go throughe with hyt. Yf not, I am sure he wyll rather holde me excused than I shold herte myself. I pray advertyse me whether the partner hold or not and hyt be advised them to what tyme, and yf hyt be not knowen at your receyte of thys letter then one of my men shall stay untill Sonday next at noone whom I do purposely appoynt to bryng me knowledge of hyt, but longer than that tyme he can not staye and my selff be able to come uppe in convenyent tyme. And thus I do comytt you to God, trusting that by hys helpe and operacyon of the Baths you are made a perfytt man agayne.

At sea thys Sonday the iiijth of September 1580

Your assured freind

John Popham.'

AC/C20

¹ It is not clear why Sir John Popham was at sea, although he did have shipping and commercial interests, and was also involved with settlements in Ireland. See F.W. Popham, *A West Country Family: The Pophams from 1150*, 1976, pp. 40–51. See also Letters 17, 70 and 79.

**43. THOMAS PHELIPPS¹ TO MATTHEW SMYTH
MONTACUTE 3 OCTOBER 1580**

Sends his son Edward Phelipps to Smyth in London, trusting that his behaviour 'hath been and wilbe such that you and I shall have good cause to lyke well of'. Asks Smyth to 'be more than a Father to him'. Refers to negotiations by Smyth and 'your lovinge Friend Mr. Downinge' to purchase land called Thorne near Montacute, formerly part of the lands of the Priory of Montacute. Offers his services in the negotiations.

AC/C31/2

¹ Thomas Phelips of Montacute had married Elizabeth Smyth, their son Edward was the builder of Montacute House.

**44. EDWARD PHELIPS TO MATTHEW SMYTH AT LONG
ASHTON
LONDON 2 NOVEMBER [1580]**

Writes to inform Smyth he has received 'by Mr. Palmer's direction' several offers for 'your house in Redcrosse Streate'. Mentions Dr. Gifford who has offered £600, Robert Chamberlain, Mr. Skydmore, Francis Throgemorton 'to whose man being with me to that end I rated the price to be not lesse than one thousand markes'.

Asks Smyth for his further instructions concerning the sale of the house.

'Newes worth the reportinge you we have not. A Muscavitt embassader of good accompt as yt seemeth by the honor of his enterteynment is this present day receaved at the Court. To what end this embassage tendeth we yet heare not.'

AC/C31/3

45. EDWARD MORGAN¹ TO MATTHEW SMYTH
LLANTARNAM 8 DECEMBER [1580]

Concerns an annuity payable to the writer and other legal matters on which he seeks advice. Signed by 'your Loving nephew and assured Frend'.

AC/C32/1

¹ Edward Morgan of Llantarnam was Matthew Smyth's nephew by marriage. He had married Elizabeth, daughter of Hugh Smyth. G.T. Clarke, *The Genealogies of Morgan and Glamorgan*, 1886, p. 322.

46. EDWARD PHELIPPS TO MATTHEW SMYTH
MONTACUTE 26 DECEMBER [1580]

'My good cosen, as he that desyreth the place amongst your trewest friends, I present you my parents and owne salutacons, with there most harty thanks for your kynd remembraunce of them, much desyryng to see you and my good cosen at Mountagwe, which favour yf you please not to yeld them, they have vowed (God not thwarting yt) to see you at Longe-ashton sometyme this Sommer. My mother more than longinge to see my cosen your wiffe and Children, whome as yet she hath not seene.'

Informs Smyth of further negotiations with Dr. Gifford regarding the sale of the house in Redcross Street.¹

AC/C31/4

¹ The house was eventually purchased in June 1581 by Dame Elizabeth Golding for £566. B.R.O. 36074/2.

47. EDWARD MORGAN TO MATTHEW SMYTH
LLANTARNAM 17 JANUARY 1581

Further discussion of unspecified legal business and request for advice and counsel.

AC/C32/2

**48. EDWARD MORGAN TO MATTHEW SMYTH
LLANTARNAM 15 APRIL [1581]**

Further discussion of unspecified legal business. Reference to 'my cousin Harry Morgan'.

AC/C32/3

**49. EDWARD MORGAN TO MATTHEW SMYTH IN LONDON
LLANTARNAM 17 APRIL [1581]**

Discussion of unspecified legal and financial business. Reference to 'my cosyne William Morgan' and to 'Mr Powell'. Reference also to £120 owed to Matthew Smyth by Mr Powell.

AC/C32/4

**50. EDWARD MORGAN TO MATTHEW SMYTH IN LONDON
CAERLEON 5 JUNE 1581**

Discussion of unspecified legal matters. Reference to 'a Kynsman of myn one Edward Thomas who servyth my lord chancellor.' Reference to 'Lands of Powell's in Cristechurche' Asks for instructions ' . . . touching the land in St Arvans'.

AC/C32/5

**51. EDWARD MORGAN TO MATTHEW SMYTH IN LONDON
LLANTARNAM 10 JUNE 1581**

Reports that he has warned all of Mr Powell's tenants to withhold their rents, and that all have done so except those from St Arvan, 'who as I am enfformyed have paid hitt to Mr Powell, who contrarye to his promise, hath been earnest both with them and the rest to paye him their rents' Urges Smyth to take some urgent action to collect the rents for himself

AC/C32/6

52. EDWARD MORGAN TO MATTHEW SMYTH AT LONG ASHTON

LLANTARNAM 27 JULY 1581

Writes that he had intended to visit Smyth at Ashton Court on 28 July, 'butt when I bethought me of the Faire att Bristoll¹ I alteryd my determynacyon knowing you should at this tym be so coisityd with your Freynnds resorting to the Citty that your leysur would not serv to suche cumbersum affayres as I am alwayes accustomyd to trouble you with'. Refers to agreement he has reached over financial matters with various tenants, to the receipt of his legacy from Matthew Smyth, to his cousin William Morgan, and to a legacy payable to his cousin Grace Tyllys.

AC/C32/7

¹ This was St James' Fair, one of the great Bristol fairs, held each year around the feast of St James the Great, on 25 July.

53. EDWARD MORGAN TO MATTHEW SMYTH

LLANTARNAM 14 AUGUST 1581

Thanks Smyth for 'my good entertaynment'. Has made a search for 'the draught you spake of, drawn by you betwyn the Colledg and my Father, and I can fynde non suche'.

Sends 'the' articles of the last Composition under the seale of the Colledg'.

AC/C32/8

54. THOMAS MORGAN¹ TO MATTHEW SMYTH AT LONG ASHTON

TREDEGAR 24 SEPTEMBER 1581

Has received Smyth's letter, and reports that he has as yet done nothing concerning Mr Powell because

'Mr Powell hath keapte hym selffe so close and the most part at the Councell of the Marches that I could by no means apprehend hym, but one hath promysed to betraye hym unto me this weake, or at the farthest at the next Quarter Sessions, and assure your selffe that I will do the best that shall lye in me for to have his bodye, although his keeping, having no

gayle,² shalbe dangerous unto me, and yf I maye not come by his bodye, I will execute your extent unfaynedly to the uttermost'.

AC/C32/9

¹ Thomas Morgan of Tredegar, a lawyer at the Middle Temple 1567–1577, Sheriff 1581, see G.T. Clarke, *op. cit.*, p. 311.

² Gaol.

55. EDWARD MORGAN TO MATTHEW SMYTH AT LONG ASHTON

LLANTARNAM 27 SEPTEMBER 1581

Reports that Powell has been arrested by the sheriff, who 'hath shewyd hymself no less your frynd in bringing hitt to pass than sound in rejecting lardg offers mad hym yff he woold have (parted?) with you in concealing his escape'. Asks Smyth to make a speedy decision as to what course he wishes to take, for the sheriff is at the charge of keeping Powell in custody and watching him, 'being so Fickle as you know hym to be'.

Discusses other legal business concerning 'my uncle Carew', and Mr Winter. Asks for time to seek counsel before signing any documents. Requests Smyth's opinion over a lease on behalf of Sir William Herbert.

AC/C32/10

56. EDWARD MORGAN TO MATTHEW SMYTH AT LONG ASHTON

PENTRE¹ 1 OCTOBER 1581

Reports that the sheriff has received Smyth's letter, and that 'in myn opinione the Consideratione you meane to have of his doing ys verye lyberall'. Assures Smyth that he will be kept informed of what is done in the matter of Powell. Asks Smyth to pay Mrs Ann Arundell her legacy, or at least to fix some definite time for doing so. Discusses other business affairs in which he is engaged on Smyth's behalf with Mr Curle and Mr Stanfaste.

AC/C32/11

¹ Pentre is in Glamorgan.

57. THOMAS MORGAN TO MATTHEW SMYTH AT LONG ASHTON

TREDEGAR 1 OCTOBER 1581

'Mr Smythe I have receaved your letter whereby I do understand that I have brought my selffe to a greate inconveniens in pleasuringe you, for the taking of Mr Powell, I perceave now for my good will all the burthen is like to lye upon my backe. There were fewe men in Yngland that could have made me to apprehend hym but you, and what yvell will I have gotten by hit in my countre hit is knowen. I have byn dryven to send xx men to conduct hym from Abergayne where he was apprehendyd unto the gayle, and dryven to watche him daye and nyght to my greate charges. I thynke fewe men in Monmouth Shyere yf they had byn Sheryffes, onlesse hit had byn my cosyn Edward Morgan, would have layed hands on hym. You have layd down hard condicions for hym the wyche I woulde have been glad that that should performe. I have no more to wrytt but that you will consider of me as of one that hathe put hym selffe to farre in danger for your sake, and so I comytt you to God.

Tredegar the 1st October 1581

Thomas Morgan'.

AC/C32/12

58. THOMAS MORGAN TO MATTHEW SMYTH

TREDEGAR OCTOBER 1581

Writes that Smyth takes the contents of his last letter otherwise than it was meant, but protests that Smyth cannot blame him for thinking of the danger he had put himself in over Powell.

'I had no convenient place of saffety to keepe Mr Powell in and yf you had byn Sheryffe your selff I knowe you would not have offered to put hym in a vyle dungeon amongst felons and in trowthe for want of a convenyent gayle I am dryven to hyre men to loke to hym'.

Denies that he wants money from Smyth for his trouble, and says he would not take a penny for executing his office. Prays Smyth to be mercifull to Powell and to deal with him favourably in taking a reasonable composition for his debt. Reports that Powell confesses to owing Smyth £360, and offers to pay one half 'very shortly' and the residue at midsummer. Powell also offers to give such sureties as Edward Morgan shall think sufficient.

Morgan adds that he will heartily glad to be rid of the burden Powell.

AC/C32/13

**59. EDWARD MORGAN TO MATTHEW SMYTH
LLANTARNAM 10 OCTOBER 1581**

Writes on behalf of Powell and of Powell's friends to urge Smyth to be considerate and to accept Powell's offer.

AC/C32/14

**60. EDWARD MORGAN TO MATTHEW SMYTH AT LONG
ASHTON
LLANTARNAM 11 OCTOBER 1581**

Writes to ask Smyth to help 'a deer frynde and uncle of myn' who wishes to raise the sum of £100 in London for a year 'upon reasonable consideration'.

AC/C32/15

**61. EDWARD MORGAN TO MATTHEW SMYTH AT LONG
ASHTON
PENTRE 12 OCTOBER 1581**

Urges Smyth to accept Powell's offer. 'I think hitt sum pleasur to be rydd of so cumbersum a fellow . . . '.

Mentions money matters concerning his uncle Carew.

Refers to Smyth's intending departure with his family to London, and hopes they may avoid 'the visytacion that hathe been ther of late . . . especially in respect of my yonge cosyns who in respect of their adges are mor subject to infections than those of greater yeres'.

AC/C32/16

**62. EDWARD MORGAN TO MATTHEW SMYTH
LLANTARNAM 20 OCTOBER 1581**

Thanks Smyth for being helpful 'to my frynde on whose behalf I was so bould to crave your aid'.

Further discussion of unspecified money matters and of Smyth's journey to London.

AC/C32/17

63. EDWARD MORGAN TO MATTHEW SMYTH IN LONDON
24 OCTOBER 1581

Thanks Smyth for his kindness and acknowledges how much he is beholden to him.

AC/C32/18

64. SIR NICHOLAS POINTZ¹ TO MATTHEW SMYTH AT
LONG ASHTON

IRON ACTON 8 APRIL 1582

Sends this letter by the hand of John Green, formerly his servant, and testifies to Green's honesty and good behaviour as his game-keeper. He had previously served as a keeper to Sir John Danvers and Sir Harry Sherrington and had given them complete satisfaction. He is skilled in keeping deer and is only leaving his present post 'for that my deere are distroyed and my groundes disparted'.

AC/C21

¹ For the Poyntz family of Iron Acton see *Harleian Society* XXI, 1885, pp. 130–135.

65. JOHN HORNER TO MATTHEW SMYTH

CLOFORD 17 APRIL 1582

Horner has instructed the bearer of this letter to bring him news of Smyth's health. He has heard that Smyth and Sir John Young have become great friends and are riding together to London, and he is pleased at the news. Assures Smyth of his friendship and hopes to hear from him.

AC/C13/3

¹ Sir John Young had entertained Queen Elizabeth at his new 'Great House' in Bristol during her visit in 1574 and had been knighted for his pains. He owned various estates in the west country including the manor of Easton-in-Gordano.

J. Collinson, *History of Somerset*, 1791, III, p. 149.

S. Seyer, *Memoirs of Bristol*, 1823, II, pp. 244–245.

66. JOHN HORNER TO MATTHEW SMYTH AT ASHTON COURT

27 NOVEMBER 1582

Has received Smyth's letter and agrees to meet him and Sir George Norton at Wells on the following Friday to discuss the composition for [oxen]¹, sheep and soldiers for Ireland.

AC/C13/4

¹ This word is almost illegible in the MS.

67. LAURENCE HYDE¹ TO MATTHEW SMYTH AT LONG ASHTON

WEST HATCH, 6 JULY 1582

Asks for a buck for his sister Gwynne by St James tide [25 July]. Promises to serve him in any way he can.

AC/C22

¹ For details of Laurence Hyde of West Hatch in Wiltshire, see *V.C.H. Wiltshire*, VI, p. 224; F. Brown (ed.), *Abstracts of Somerset Wills 1890*, VI, pp. 27-29.

68. HENRY BERKELEY TO MATTHEW SMYTH

BERKELEY CASTLE, 19 AUGUST 1582

Sends commendations and would be glad to see Smyth 'at my castell of Barkeleye, whither you shoulde have ben moste hartelie welcombe'. Has need of money and asks Smyth to lend him £200 for one year and promises assurance either by 'suerties of sufficiente and substantiall persons within this countie of Gloucester or ells by conveyance of lande, at your choise and as you shall beste like'.

Has sent the bearer Thomas Denys to confer with Smyth on the matter.

AC/C23

69. JOHN MORGAN¹ TO MATTHEW SMYTH AT LONG ASHTON

BREME, 21 SEPTEMBER 1582

Reminds Smyth that during the previous Easter term Sir William Winter² 'had some conference with you about the L. Stafford's Lands extended unto him in Thornbury' and about the tenants refusal to pay their rents to him. Smyth had then advised that a Court should be held in Sir William's name at Thornbury and the tenants should be summoned to appear before it, and if they refused they would be in danger of forfeiting their tenancies.

'So it is Sir, that all somer they have driven me forth with faire promises, and nowe it falleth out that they will do nothinge. It pleased you at the same tyme to say to Sir William that you would take the paynes to travaile to Thornbury and see the orderinge of the matter which yf it please you to do I beseche you to write by his messenger the daye of your best leasure and I will cause summons to be given accordinglie. And yf your other business will not suffer you, I earnestlie crave you to be so good as to write a fewe words by this berer that may serve me for a direction to proceed in the cause. And thus desiring my dutye to be imparted to good Mrs Smith, I praye God kepe yow. Breme the 21 of September 1582

To you with much bound,
John Morgan.

AC/C24

¹ For identity of John Morgan see G.T. Clarke, *op. cit.*, pp. 310–311. Breme or Bream is in the parish of Newland in West Gloucestershire.

² Sir William Winter of Lydney died in 1589, was an admiral of the Elizabethan navy, and took part in several major sea battles, including the fight against the Armada. He was the elder son of John Winter d. 1546 merchant and sea-captain of Bristol and Treasurer of the Navy 1545–1546. *D.N.B.* LXII, pp. 220–222.

70. SIR JOHN POPHAM¹ TO MATTHEW SMYTH AT LONG ASHTON

TAUNTON, 18 OCTOBER 1582

Hopes shortly to meet Smyth. 'I understand that I am loked for at the court, where I wold be gladd to meete with you and impart to you what ys donne in your cause'. Mentions also the case concerning 'the great Utrag [outrage] comytted by Mr Bulbecke . . .'

Asks Smyth to ensure that Bulbecke appears at the next sessions at Wells to answer the charges against him.

AC/C25

¹ Sir John Popham, Attorney General, see D.N.B. XLVI, pp. 146–149. See also Letter 42.

71. C. SOMERSET TO MATTHEW SMYTH
ROGERSTON,¹ 8 NOVEMBER 1582

Sends hearty commendations and informs Smyth that he is making a new warren and wishes to obtain 'so many store conyes as wilbe needful'. Asks Smyth to send him

'... as many doe conyes as conveniently you can spare, not prejudicing your game, the most black, yf you have any store, which doing you shall minister unto me an acceptable pleasure, and give me cause to be redy to requyte the same with any thing I have, with thanks according'²

AC/C26

¹ Rogerston is in Monmouthshire, 2½ miles west of Newport.

² This letter is endorsed 'Sir Charles Somerset'. He was the fifth son of the Earl of Worcester, and had married the widow of Giles Morgan of Newport. He died in 1598 and is buried under an elaborate tomb in St James' church, Bristol.

72. SIR WILLIAM WINTER TO MATTHEW SMYTH
LONDON, 2 DECEMBER 1582

Writes to inform Smyth about the situation of 'Doctor Wilson's' causes, whose acquaintaince I wold I had never had'

He has paid Wilson's debts to the following:

'to Parrimore, Raven, Alderman Martyn, Smyth Customer, Long, Beare, Bruer, Dype, Yeoman, Tottell and Watson, the some of £1,250, besides others to the value of £50 or £60 in petty debts Also there is disbursed by you and me, for Wilson's funeralls chardge of Nycholas Wilson (whoe is in Fraunce by Mr Secretaries appointment, but not as his finedinge, which is not lyttle) and chardge of the wenches, and other layinge owt, to the value of £350 upwards, (the more foolle I) that hathe bene ledd in hope, with Mr Secretaries promises, whoe hath not as yet, performed any thinge, I meane in procuringe us warraunt for the money disbursed, for funeralls, or in getting owt of the lycence promised by the Quene'.

Also informs Smyth that Wilson's house at St Katherine's, his books, household stuff and apparell remain unsold, 'this plage hathe bene a hinderance to hit'. Further assets of Wilson, including the lease of Saltfleetby, remain to be dealt with. Refers also to Welshe 'whome I wish I had never knowen, (nor any of his Friends). And I

thincke in the ende wee shall breake off, for that the Lord Chauncellor begynneth to have mislykinge with the boyes bad behaviour and condishions . . .' Hopes to see Smyth at the beginning of the next term 'until which tyme I will leave to trouble you in these unpleasant causes'.

'The matters of Flanders doe mende as sower whaye in somer. Don Antonio² is not heard of and there is doubt of his well doinge. Skotland is quiet as yet, And for the Frenche they will doe well in all plases'.

Postscript: 'Beare with me for when I wrote this I had a purgacon in my bellye'.

AC/C27

¹ Dr Thomas Wilson, Secretary of State to Queen Elizabeth.

² Don Antonio, the Pretender to the Portuguese throne, who was supported by France and England, see J.B. Black, *The Reign of Elizabeth*, 1952, p. 308.

73. JOHN HORNER TO MATTHEW SMYTH

CLOFORD, 8 DECEMBER 1582

Has no news to send except that they have dealt with the most part of the composition for Ireland and the soldiers are to be at Bristol on 15 December where he hopes Smyth will obtain cloth for their uniforms.

Has received a letter from Sir George Speke to Mr Barkley ordering that the money is to be sent either to Sir John Clifton or to Sir George Speke, but since this is contrary to the agreement they reached at Wells, Horner is reluctant to comply.¹

AC/C13/5

¹ Sir George Speke of Whitelackington and Dowlish was Sheriff of Somerset 1562. J. Collinson, op. cit. I, p. 67.

74. JOHN HORNER TO MATTHEW SMYTH

CLOFORD 21 DECEMBER 1582

Sends good wishes for Smyth's health, and reports that all the money for the Irish composition has been collected from his limits but that the soldiers have not yet been delivered to the captain at Bristol. Suggests meeting at Wells the night before the next Sessions.

AC/C13/6

75. JOHN HORNER TO MATTHEW SMYTH
CLOFORD 26 DECEMBER 1582

Further discussion of the composition of oxen and sheep from his area and of how this can best be collected before 10 January.

AC/C13/7

76. JOHN HORNER TO MATTHEW SMYTH
CLOFORD 28 DECEMBER 1582

Further request for advice on the provision of oxen and sheep from his district.

AC/C13/8

77. JOHN HORNER TO MATTHEW SMYTH
CLOFORD 4 MARCH 1583

Reports that Mr Attorney¹ has been at Cloford since the previous Friday and has now departed. Asks Smyth to send him word if he intends to be at the Quarter Sessions at Ilchester.

AC/C13/9

¹ This is a reference to Sir John Popham who became Attorney General in 1581. See Letters 42 and 70.

78. EDWARD POPHAM TO MATTHEW SMYTH
HUNTWORTH, 18 MARCH 1583

Long account of a dispute over a will and legacies involving John Piers of Kewstoke, Edward Carr, Anthony Selwood, Roger Ewens, Thomas Bursell and John Comb. Smyth is involved on behalf of some of the parties in the dispute but the interest of the writer in the matter is not clear from his letter.

AC/C29

¹ Edward Popham of Huntworth, Somerset was the brother of Sir John Popham, later Lord Chief Justice. J. Collinson, *op. cit.*, III, pp. 71-72.

**79. MAURICE HORNER¹ TO MATTHEW SMYTH AT THE
MIDDLE TEMPLE**

CLOFORD, 27 MAY 1583

Informs Smyth that the winter has delivered £4 to Mr Ashe which 'you most courteously lent me: for the which I can but most humble [*sic*] thanke youe and thinke myselfe beholdinge unto you for so great courtesye. And yf please youe to imploye me, you shall fynde me most ready at your commandment'.

AC/C13/12

¹ The bottom of the letter is torn through the signature, but the writer appears to have signed his christian name 'Mor'.

Maurice Horner was a younger son of Sir John Horner of Cloford and Mells, see Collinson *op. cit.* II, p. 206, and inscription on monument in Cloford church.

**80. JOHN HORNER TO MATTHEW SMYTH AT LONG
ASHTON**

20 NOVEMBER 1583

Writes concerning an old woman of Chew named Amys Sherborne who is one of Smyth's tenants in Whitchurch. ' . . . the woman I knowe not but my wyfe is beholdinge to here frynds specially in this late syknes that she had'. Requests that Smyth will allow the woman to live away from her tenement in Whitchurch for a time, 'and the rather she desyrythe it for that a preste is lyke to be or is already in the howse, and he being there she is so much the more desyrus to be from thence'.

Asks Smyth's company in visiting the hundreds of Keynsham, Chew, Chewton, Bathforum, Bathampton, Wells, Kilmersdon and Frome, 'for the statute of Laborers is to be sate uppon byfore Christmas as I remember . . .'

AC/C13/10

**81. JANE SMYTH¹ TO MATTHEW SMYTH AT THE MIDDLE
TEMPLE**

ASHTON COURT, 20 APRIL N.Y.

'Mr Smyth hoping of your sauffe comyng to London. You shall understand I prayse God your children remain in helthe, sythe your departure yew had brought home from Bradwells Downe 1,250 palls² by

14 plowghs apon Thursday last, whosse names are all set downe that brought them. You shall understand that Thomas Jenycins hath purchased half a tonne of Gasscon wyne for yew, and the prys ys but £4 13s 4d and as good as that you had of Mr Salter and to be partaken up at Lymme Kyllns³ yf yew lyke of yt yew must send word presently. Parker came home apon Thursday nyght from the fayre in Walles and broughte home ix hedd of cattell, iii of them kynne and the rest barren as yew had very —⁴, which cost ther £10 5s 6d and the charges 10s 5d. Levying any further to trowble yew, with my harty commendacyons unto yourself and all other my frynds with you, Ayshton thys present the xx of Aprill,

Yours lovyng wyff
Jane Smyth'.

AC/C34

¹ Jane Smyth was Matthew Smyth's wife; she was the daughter of Thomas Tewther of Ludlow. See J.H. Bettey, *The Rise of a Gentry Family*, pp. 13 & 21; also S.R.O. DD/SAS/(C1183) 5/1 pp. 54–55.

² Probably 'pales' for the park fence; 'plowghs' means the plough-teams.

³ Down the Avon from Bristol.

⁴ Word illegible.

82. THOMAS ARTHUR¹ TO MATTHEW SMYTH CLOPTON 12 MARCH N.Y.

Hopes that Smyth has recovered his health. Writes concerning a dispute over land leased from him by William Porter and his son John Porter, which lease Arthur claims has now expired.

' . . . my man Walcar told me that you sayd you know some what of my delings and also that I sold my ground to good chep, and therefore I wolde have hyt agayne, truly I never mad that bargayne yet with any man but he had his promis of me, and there fore it is not small gryffe unto me that you especially do condemn me apon report of a varlet or to . . . '

Assures Smyth of his honest dealings, 'I was alwayse desyrus to have your good wyll and to kype the same'. Asks that the dispute shall be brought to trial at law.

AC/C28

¹ Thomas Arthur of Clapton in Gordano, Somerset was a member of a family which had possessed the manor there since the twelfth century. J. Collinson, *op. cit.*, III, pp. 177–178.

83. RICHARD BERKELEY¹ TO MATTHEW SMYTH**'AT STOK' N.D.**

Appoints Mr Reed 'to talke of the matter between you and me', and gives him full power to come to some agreement.

'I pray you gyve me leave to be ymportunat upon you for your land in Harrystoke, and that you will yeld to my request, and to send me word what I shall pay for yt. Yt wyll serve my turne so comodyously that I must needs entreate yt'.

AC/C30/1

¹ Richard Berkeley of Harry Stoke in the parish of Stoke Gifford, Gloucestershire. J. Maclean and W.C. Heane (eds.), 'The Visitation of the County of Gloucester' *Harleian Society*, XXI, 1885, p. 8-9.

84. RICHARD BERKELEY TO MATTHEW SMYTH**HARRY STOKE, N.D.**

'I am content with the choysse ye have made of Mr Hannam to matche with Mr Reed'. Undertakes to abide by any agreement they shall arrive at.

'Yff you wyll not lett me have your land untill I can provyde you of other land at Wynterborne, I wyll never look for yt. Mr Bradstone ys no sellar of land. Yff you knew how greatly that lack of yt wyll hynder my purpose now yn hand I am sure you would lett me have yt'.

*AC/C30/2***85. RICHARD BERKELEY TO MATTHEW SMYTH****HARRY STOKE, N.D.**

Refers to the award which has been made between them, and to 'the ground I have bought of you at Harrystok'. 'I pray you lett me know how the yndenture shall be made and what covenants. I would have yt to bothe my sonnes and to my sonnes sonn'. Agrees to send the money at All Hallows.

Postscript: 'I would very wyllingly make a sute to you that you would sell me the fee symple of that lyttle ground. You should do me very greate pleasure, yt lyethe so commodiously for me'.

AC/C30/3

86. RICHARD BERKELEY TO MATTHEW SMYTH.

HARRY STOKE 23 NOVEMBER ———

Refers to his request for an abatement of 20 nobles for the land at Harry Stoke, and understands that Smyth is not willing to agree.

‘Wherefore I wyll not desyre you any further to abate any thyng. I wyll gyve you your prysse, a hundred marks, with allso many thanks that you wyll yeld to pleasure me with your land’. I pray you gyve your tennantes yn Hambrook leave to exchange a barrayne peece of fyeld ground with me, which lyethe neare my ground and wyll serve my turne comodyously. Yt ys allmost too akers by estymacon, but not above. Your tenants shall have as moche of me that lyethe more for theyr comodyty’.

Refers also to business over the manor of Ridgeway involving the Lord Chancellor and Mr. Moore.

AC/C30/4

87. RICHARD BERKELEY TO MATTHEW SMYTH

HARRY STOKE N.D.

Cannot find the Lord Chancellor’s order which Smyth has asked for, neither can he remember ever having received it.

AC/C30/5

88. RICHARD BERKELEY TO MATTHEW SMYTH

N.D.

Further discussion of a lease and of dealings with Mr Moore. Reference also to ‘my coursins Francis Denys’.

AC/C30/6

89. RICHARD BERKELEY TO MATTHEW SMYTH

HARRY STOKE N.D.

Refers to their dealings over land at Ridgeway and reminds Smyth that he has had much the better bargain,

‘. . . you payed £160 for the whole land, and had of me £180 for one part, and all thys besyde the rent ye have receved so many yeres. So that thowghe you paye all the money awarded, you have your land for lesse money than I payed for myne, I pray you have consyderacyon of yt. I

never understoode thys muche untyll synce I saw you last. But I wyll not be myne owne Judge, yff yt please you lett other yndyfferent men order the matter . . .'

AC/C30/7

90. RICHARD BERKELEY TO MATTHEW SMYTH

HARRY STOKE N.D.

Refers to his proposed journey beyond the seas and to a lease of lands which he has made to two friends, so that if he should die before his return they may pay off certain of his debts. 'I would have theyr lease very suffycient, therefore I pray you advetyse me what you think of yt and refourme yt where you see cause'.

Promises to pay Smyth £63 6s 8d for land at Harry Stoke 'at London the wyk affter Allhallowtyde about the 10 day of november'.

Refers to 'the boke engrossed drawn by Mr Snygg'.¹

AC/C30/8

¹ George Snygg or Snygge was a Bristol merchant and warden of the Merchant Venturers in 1564. P. McGrath, *The Merchant Venturers of Bristol*, 1975, pp. 18–19. The reference here, however, is probably to the lawyer, Sir George Snigge who was Sergeant-at-Law, Recorder and M.P. for Bristol during the early seventeenth century and who died in 1617. His elaborate tomb is in St Stephen's Church, Bristol. J. Latimer, *Annals of Bristol in the Seventeenth Century*, 1900, pp. 15, 20, 22–23, 36. See also B.R.O. AC/S7/3 a–b.

91. RICHARD BERKELEY TO MATTHEW SMYTH

N.D.

Requests a meeting between them 'betweene your howse and myne about Bristow or Laffourds gate, yff your leysure wyll serve to confer with you of my owne matters and that which concerne us both'.

AC/C30/9

92. RICHARD BERKELEY TO MATTHEW SMYTH

N.D.

Has just come from London and therefore has no horses or men 'to send thither so soone as thys matter requyereth, by reason also that I have sent an other company with my dawghter yn law unto Bukynghamshyre to her father'.

Asks Smyth to send a messenger with his letter and he will bear half the charges.

Intends to defer his going beyond the seas until the spring.

AC/C30/10

93. RICHARD BERKELEY TO MATTHEW SMYTH

N.D.

Promises to send the money he owes for legal charges in a fortnight's time. Cannot send it earlier because he needs all the money he can get together within ten days.

AC/C30/11

94. RICHARD BERKELEY TO MATTHEW SMYTH

N.D.

Recommends the bearer of the letter to Smyth. The man has looked after Berkeley's horses for many years and now 'overwearyed with the labor he must tak with me because I kepe many jades', he desires a position where fewer horses are kept and he can have less labour and more help.

AC/C30/12

95. THOMAS PHELIPPS¹ TO MATTHEW SMYTH 'OF THE TEMPLE'

MONTACUTE 4 JULY N.Y.

Sends commendations and thanks 'my gentle Cosyn for manye your Friendly paynes donne and shewyd unto me'. Sends also 'such a jewell as groweth of lyke drowsye Rocke wherof the same was taken, which I shall harteley praye you to bestow in sum Corner of your studye'.
.

Asks Smyth to pay on behalf of 'my Friend Mr Duport', the sum of £10 to 'Mr Gardener the Gouldsmythe your Frynde'. Promises to repay him at Michaelmas.

' . . . your good Aunte and my wieffe . . . ys very desyrous to see you, and wishes that she dwelt sumwhar nere Powles (St Pauls), so as your godsonne Edwarde her sonne mowght be trayned with sum of yowre Friends in Schole there'.

AC/C31/1

¹ Thomas Phelipps or Phelips of Montacute married Elizabeth daughter of Matthew Smyth (died 1526), J. Collinson, *op. cit.*, II, p. 292; see also Genealogical Table.

96. CHRISTOPHER KENN¹ TO JANE SMYTH AT LONG ASHTON

KENN, 5 MARCH 1584

'Good Mystris Smethe, For a confirmation of your sute for such land of myne as lyeth within the precincts of the parke you sute for such land of at this presente sente my Brother to signify unto you my determination therein. That ys to saye, so much severall and enclosed ground of woodd medowe and pasture of myne, as ys sytuated, lyinge and beinge from the este parte of Clarken Lane unto Redyates, extending sowtheward to the nerest highe waye that leadeth towards Brystol and the north syde to the common down of Aisheton, I am contented you shall have, paying for the same Two hundred and Fifty Poundes, and to release by assignment or otherwyse your interest of the resedue of the demaynes, which prisse as I do well know to be reasonable and Friendly, so yf you shall any way myslike thereof, I will in performance of my promys and professed freindshippe to you in the cause, bestowe uppon you the Twenty Poundes to by you a geldinge and a sadele, in token of my good wyll, which considered I hope you will accepte of my faire offer as yt is mente of my parte, and return by this bearer your resolute Ansswer her in, and to blame your selffe yf you omytt the opportunitye of so Indifferente an offer which now or never ys to be obtayned, beinge otherwyse to make my presente commoditie Toward the discharge of a waighty causes taken in hand, that cannot longer bee deferred. My said money, yff you conclude, I must receyve within three dayes after our Lady Daye nexte cominge, and I will make you such resonable assurance of my said land as your late husband demanded of me when we weare in Communication for the said lands.

And thus wysHINGE you ever as to my selfe, I send my hartiest commendations

At Kenn this Vth of Marche 1583 [1584]

Yor loving neighbour and friend
Christopher Kenn'.

AC/C38

¹ For details of the Kenn family, see J. Collinson, *op. cit.*, II, p. 292; III, pp. 123, 284, 295, 529. Christopher Kenn was Sheriff of Somerset in 1575.

97. SIR JOHN POPHAM TO MISTRESS JANE SMYTH
19 MARCH 1587

Writes to inform her that before Easter term next he will have ready £500, or within £20, and that was the day on which Mr Rodney expected it to satisfy Mr Freke. He has also been promised by Mr Controller the rest of the money which amounts to £300. A bond is to be drawn up by Mr Ashe and perused by Mr Rodney before being sent to Sir John Popham.

AC/C39

**98. EDWARD PHELIPPS¹ TO HUGH (LATER SIR HUGH)
SMYTH AT LONG ASHTON**
CHARD, 18 JULY 1596

Requests the gift of some venison for 'a good frend of myne, Mr Colson, sercher of Bristowe'² Asks that 'you will be pleased to bestowe uppon him one of your bucks'. Sends thanks and commendations 'to my good cozen your bed fellowe'.³

AC/C31/5

¹ Sir Edward Phelipps, Master of the Rolls and speaker of the House of Commons; builder of Montacute House. *D.N.B.* XLV, pp. 143-144; J. Collinson, *op. cit.* III, p. 314.

Sir Edward's mother was Elizabeth, daughter of Matthew Smyth. The address has been torn off.

² Thomas Colston, merchant of Bristol, Sheriff 1562, mayor 1577, who died in 1597 was an ancestor of the Bristol philanthropist Edward Colston. Thomas Garrard, *Edward Colston, the Philanthropist*, 1852, pp. 2-3.

³ Hugh Smyth had married Elizabeth daughter of Sir Thomas Gorges of Longford Castle, Wiltshire, in 1596. See Letter 101 footnote 1.

99. EDWARD PHELIPPS TO SIR HUGH SMYTH
MONTACUTE 8 JANUARY 1603

Sends commendations and apologies that 'I did not satisfie your desire and my promise in sendinge my Sonne unto you this

Cristemas, impute it I praye you to the foulness of the wayes and weather, and not to any purpose of myne to neglecte your expectacon’.

Has now sent his son ‘and doe committ him to your charge and trust, as your neareste Kinsman, he is in his well-doing my hope and comforte, and so I pray you esteem him’

AC/C31/6

100. MAURICE BERKELEY¹ TO SIR HUGH SMYTH²

BATTINGTON 16 OCTOBER —

Insists that he sent a good hawk to Sir Hugh and ‘if shee have been spoiled since you had her itt is not my fawlt’. Refuses to send another hawk, and is ready at any time to pay his debt to Sir Hugh for a horse, either with a horse or with money. ‘I coulde have sent you your owne horse back againe as well as you send mee the hawk being a greate deale less the woorse for my use. But I will nott so deale with you nether did I think that you would have dealt so with mee’.

AC/C40

¹ In the 1623 Visitation of Somerset ‘Morice Berkeley’ is shown as ‘living in Ireland’. It seems probable that this letter was written from Ireland but it has not been possible to locate ‘Battington’.

² Hugh Smyth was knighted by James I in 1603.

101. SIR THOMAS GORGES¹ TO SIR HUGH SMYTH

LANGFORD 16 FEBRUARY 1609

Assures Sir Hugh of his love, and is pleased to hear of his health and that of his wife and little ones. Will be glad to see him at Langford at any time, ‘for it is the greatest comfort that I receave to see my soe deere frends about me’.

Has come from London on the previous Tuesday where he has taken possession of a house in the White Friars.

AC/C41/1

¹ In 1596 Sir Hugh Smyth had married Elizabeth Gorges, eldest daughter of Sir Thomas Gorges of Langford (now called Longford) Castle in Wiltshire. For details of

Sir Thomas Gorges and his wife Hellena Marchioness of Northampton see R. Gorges, *The Story of a Family*, Boston, 1944.

102. TIBBOT GORGES¹ TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT LONG ASHTON

LONDON, 22 APRIL 1610

Has spoken with his brother after Smyth's departure from Langford concerning the bay Galliard, but finds that his brother wishes to keep the horse for himself.

'I have at my first coming up presented my father's minion to the Prince who accepteth very well of him but woulde rather have had Galliard and hath made many greate offers underhand to buy him at any rate but will by no meanes accept him as a gift, but I thinke my brother will let him have him, though to his greate greife: and I am persuaded that you may have what money you will for your Barbery, for his highnesse hath a wonderfull affection to him and spake to me particularly about him: so that you may take no notice of the Prince's desire, and if you please to part with him, which I presume you would be loath, make them pay deerely for covetinge othermen's goods.² My Brother hath had great troubles aboute his place and bin neere to receve a greate affront:³ but he hath well overcome them, and all hath redounded to his honour, who hath the general good opinion of the Kinge, Prince and almost all the noble men onely my Lord Henry Howard hath bin violent in Sir Robert Bret's behalfe but with no credit'.

He will be sparing about other matters because 'your man Rafe can say as much as myselfe'. His brother Phelipps has returned safely and gone that day towards Langford. Refers to a quarrel between Lord Southampton and Lord Montgomery, 'let fall in a tennis court but taken up by the Kinge and kept in the memory of our youth in the towne⁴'. Looks forward to their meeting very shortly. Sends commendations to his sister and all his cousins 'and truehearted Mr Claxton'.⁵

AC/C41/2

¹ Tibbot or Theobald Gorges was the younger son of Sir Thomas Gorges and Lady Gorges Marchioness of Northampton, see R. Gorges, *op. cit.*, p. 110.

² 'Galliard' was evidently the name of a horse. Barbary horses had been imported into England from the mid-sixteenth century. The Prince referred to is probably Prince Henry who was an enthusiastic horseman and breeder of racehorses, see D.M. Goodall, *A History of Horse Breeding*, 1977, p. 236. For other references to Sir Hugh Smyth's horses see his will of 1627 which mentions various horses including 'my gray gelding called Horsington' which he left to Lord Gorges. S.R.O. DD/SAS (C 1193) 5/1 p. 56. I am grateful to Dr Peter Edwards for his advice on this matter.

³ A reference to the fact that the writer's brother, Edward Gorges, had a grant of

the captaincy of Hurst Castle which was to revert to him on the death of his father, Sir Thomas Gorges. Sir Thomas Gorges died in 1610.

⁴ For reference to the quarrel in a tennis court see N.E. McClure (ed.), *The Letters of John Chamberlain*, Philadelphia, 1939, Vol. I, p. 297–298.

⁵ William Claxton of Bedminster who also possessed lands in Compton Dando. He appears to have acted for Sir Hugh Smyth in various business deals. See Harleian Society, XI, 1876, p. 24; B.R.O. AC/S 7/1–5; for other references see Letters 107, 179, 202.

103. HELLENA MARCHIONESS OF NORTHAMPTON¹ TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT LONG ASHTON

REDLYNCH 15 MARCH —

Addressed 'To my very Lovinge Sonne Sir Heiugh Smithe at Ashton'. Has sent her man to see him hoping to hear news of his good health and of her daughter and 'all my children at Ashton and in Chessheere'. Earnestly desires him to proceed with the purchase of land in Ashton from Sir Nicholas Halswell.²

'For I make noe question though you have not present money to lay downe for the purchase, yet soe small a somme will easely be recovered in your estate without other sale. And the convenience is so great, that were it my case I should venter on it to free myselfe from ill neighbours though I sought all the waies to the wood for 2 or 3 yeares. Thus good sonne I hope you will be the owener of it, and in good time run out of the debt'.

The letter is signed 'your very lovinge mother Hellena Northampton'.

AC/C42/1

¹ Hellena Marchioness of Northampton was the mother of Sir Hugh Smyth's wife, Elizabeth Gorges. The Gorges family possessed the manor of Redlynch near Bruton in Somerset as well as Longford Castle near Salisbury in Wiltshire.

² Sir Nicholas Halswell possessed an estate at Gatcombe which lay immediately to the west of the Smyth lands at Ashton Court.

**104. HUGH SMYTH TO HELLENA MARCHIONESS OF NORTHAMPTON.
NO ADDRESS, HEADING OR DATE, BUT EVIDENTLY A
DRAFT OR COPY OF THE ANSWER TO AC/C42/1
ABOVE.**

Stands greatly indebted to her for all her courtesies towards him.

‘Neither do I reckon amongst the least of my ingagements this well-wishing intimation of yours inserted in your last letter about the purchase of Sir Nicholas Halswell’s land here in Ashton’.

Assures her that it is only lack of ready money that has prevented him from proceeding more speedily in the business, but since he cannot obtain the necessary money in any other way he proposes to sell ‘some unnecessary parcels, as houses or such like; by which I have little or none incomes, and yet they will not bee kept in reparations without yearely expence’. Has thought good to keep her informed of his business because of her interest and great good wishes.

AC/C42/2

**105. A FAIR COPY OF AC/C42/1 AND AC/C42/2 ABOVE,
WHICH WERE EVIDENTLY DONE SOME TIME LATER.**

The last copy is subscribed ‘your Ladyship’s Grandson, Thomas Smyth’.

**106. EDWARD HORNER¹ TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT LONG
ASHTON.**

CLOFORD 6 JUNE 1612

‘Good Cosen my fevour and Janders² Contynewe to my greife; before younge Woodson and Boswell came unto me, I had me Bailie of Bath, who hath ministered unto me for the removinge of my fevour; For my Janders my good Neighbour the Lady Hopton³ hath undertaken to healpe me. I wishe my abilitie of body might be such as to give you meetinge at Wells. But I am exceedinge weake, and how to recover strength upon such a suddaine I doubt. I think the Muster and viewe of foote and horsse will soon be dispatched. The Maior of Bathe sent me a Letter from the Recordour, that my Lordes pleasure was that their soldiers within the Cittie should be viewed in their Towne. I retourned him answere that his Lordship had not in his Letter to us given any such scope, Neither for myne owne parte could I. I wishe them to repayre unto you, who I thought would give them the Lyke answer. But howsoever what Course shall like best of, I shall willinglie give Consent. So with thanks for your freindely Care of my well doinge I leave you and your Ladie to the protection of the Heighest,

Your ever assured Cosen, Edward Horner.

Good Cosen, Remember my service to my honorable Ladie, the Lady Marquess, and my love to my godsonne and my cosen Claxton’.

36074/101

¹ Edward Horner was a younger son of Sir John Horner of Mells and Cloford in Somerset. *The Visitation of Somerset 1623*, Harleian Soc. XI, 1876, p. 57; J. Collinson, *History of Somerset*, 1791, II, p. 206.

² Jaundice.

³ The Hopton family possessed the nearby estate of Witham Friary.

107. FRANCES GYFFARD¹ TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT LONG ASHTON.

WHITELADIES 20 JULY 1612

Addressed to 'hir most esteemed loving Brother'.

'Brother, although weomen are often taxed for toe much passion, yet I will as much as may be suppress it, albeit your harshe unkinde letter woulde stirr up the same humoure that you your selfe were then guilty of. First you seme to distaste my suddayne summons, I hope I may be excusable in that I never used it, but uppon sudden inforcements, as to marry my daughter, which was a businesse unexpected both for the mariage and the speedy payment of the porcion, as in the lëtter to Mr Claxton is more at large, otherwise it must have bin broken, how dificulte it is to fynde oute convenient maches, and how neglectinge may breede inconveniences you yourselfe that have Children will in tyme know, that I doubt not when in Coulde bludde you have considered it, you will rather esteme of mee as a carefull Mother than in any way to conceypt me for a froward sister. Moreover you wrote to me you had rather have mony on hard termes, than any way to be ingaged to me, accounting it an unexpected inconvenience, yet it stands worse with me, that am not only forced to bee in their bookes, but have harde construccions for my intended kyndnesse. My hope is that att the tyme appoynted by Mr Claxton, you will sende me the mony for I have not meanes to sende for itt, and I and my freindes heare stande deeply indangered yf wee shulde not then receive it. Your letter ending with these woordes ('your brother') withoute any addicion caused me to conceypt some unkyndnesse, but hopinge that you intended that the name of brother imparteth in it selfe all love, I will leave you and youres to God and in playne sorte ende this restinge

your loving sister,
Frances Gyffard.

36074/102

¹ Frances Gyffard or Gifford was one of Sir Hugh Smyth's three step-sisters. She had married Edward Gifford of White Ladies in Shropshire. *Visitation of Somerset 1623*, Harleian Soc. XI, 1876, p. 101. See also Introduction and Letter 169.

**108. SIR EDWARD LEWIS¹ TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT
BRISTOL**

VAUNE 10 JANUARY 1613

Refers to unspecified legal business between them and to meetings which he has had with Sir John Stradling and Sir Henry Bylingsley in an effort to speed up the sealing of a conveyance. Enclosed letter from Sir John Stradling.

36074/103 a

¹ Sir Edward Lewis of Vaune was High Sheriff for the County of Glamorgan. See B.R.O. AC/S 3/10. Vaune or Van is in Glamorgan 1 mile east of Caerphilly.

109. Enclosed with the above:-

**SIR JOHN STRADLING¹ TO SIR EDWARD LEWIS
ST DONAT'S CASTLE, 27 DECEMBER 1612**

Has received the letters and Commission from Sir Edward Lewis regarding the division of certain lands between Sir Henry Billingsley and Edmund Matthew. Proposes to confer with his cousin William Thomas and with Sir Thomas Mansell and Sir John Carne and to agree upon a general meeting to deal with the matter. Sends greetings and good wishes for a merry Christmas and Happy New Year.

36074/103 b

¹ For details of the Stradling family who also possessed lands in Somerset see J. Collinson, *op. cit.* III, pp. 334-335.

**110. JOHN STRANGWAYS¹ TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT
BRISTOL**

MELBURY 24 FEBRUARY 1612

Assures Sir Hugh of his love and friendship and of his readiness to do him service 'whensoever you shall please in anie thinge to make tryall of me'. Asks Sir Hugh to lend him horses and to send them 'all furnished' to Melbury by 4 March. 'They shalbe well fedde and carefullie lookte unto and assoone as the assises are ended they shalbe saffie returned againe unto you'.

36074/104

¹ Sir John Strangways of Melbury House, Melbury Sampford, Dorset, one of the leading landowners of Dorset, G.D. Squibb (ed.) visitation of Dorset 1677, *Harleian Society*, CXVII, 1977, p. 63.

111. STEPHEN SMITH¹ TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT LONG ASHTON

LONDON, 6 MAY 1619

Writes to enquire about Sir Hugh's health and to assure him of his prayers and good wishes for a speedy recovery from his illness. Assures Sir Hugh of his constant service.

*Folger Shakespeare Library
Smyth Letters 1.*

¹ Stephen Smith was Sir Hugh Smyth's godson; Sir Hugh's younger daughter, Mary, married Sir Thomas Smith of Hough in Cheshire. For a detailed genealogy of the Smith family of Cheshire, including Stephen Smith see 'Visitation of Cheshire 1613', *Lancashire and Cheshire Record Society*, 58, 1913, pp. 212–214.

112. STEPHEN SMITH TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT LONG ASHTON

LINCOLN'S INN 14 June 1620

'Sir, I have sent you your Cassacke¹ and Canves doublet. Your taylor and I considered that canves was only fit for Summer and therefore have buttoned it according to the fashion now in request, it is not only suitable to your scarlet hose but will agree as well with any other cloath hose you have. Canves doublets are now much in request and they are all made plaine or trimmed with white lace as this is, for it is accounted somewhat pibald to trim a white doublet with trimming of different colour. If I co[u]ld have contrived it soe as to have made the canves doublet fit to have beene worne under a Cassacke I had done it: but it is not a winter wear and therefore I shall put you to the charges of a new satten doublet against winter. I have sent you a paire of Spanish leather bootes in exchaung of your russet bootes, and have exchaunged alsoe your 2 paire of shoes for one. You shall receive likewise 2 paire of welted bootehose which I think without comparison are the finest and longest for tops in London. I caused them to be made with long tops bycause I knowe that you have a good leg, and know alsoe that good legs weare very short hose. I saw a new fashioned hanger² for you this morning but it was not so good as I thought you deserved and therefore I imptied it upon him againe, and if he keepe his promise with mee I shall have a better within this two daies, with which I will send your ruffe.³ I will not trouble you

with many termes of friendship at this time, only I will assure you that none respects you more than your poor servant

Ste. Smith

Lincoln's Inn 14 June 1620

My old bedfellow Mr George Matthew desired me to present his service unto (you). Both he and I must trouble you to present our respects to your lady'.

*Folger Shakespeare Library
Smyth Letters 2.*

¹ A cassock was a loose, coat-like garment worn by both men and women. It fastened down the front with buttons. I am grateful to Miss Penelope Byrde, Keeper of Costume at Bath Costume and Fashion Research Centre, for kindly providing information about the garments mentioned in this letter and in Letters 113 and 114.

² A hanger or pair of hangers were straps hanging from girdle or belt to hold the sword. They were often highly decorated.

³ The ruff was a circular, pleated collar of fine linen, usually starched.

113. STEPHEN SMITH TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT LONG ASHTON

LINCOLN'S INN 17 JUNE 1620

'Sir, It is the respect I have often acknowledged that makes mee this often trouble you with my letters. You knowe my debts are many, you will not therfor wonder if by my many salutacons I seeke to discharge them. I have sent you a ruffe with cufts,¹ a girdle² and paire of hangers of the newest fashion, and such as are now in use by men of the best fashon. You shall receave alsoe a hanger for a woodknife according to your directions. When you have receaved these you have receaved (as I thinke) all things you wrote for, and I hope to your liking. Upon all occasions there shall not be any more ready to do you service than your poor servant

Ste. Smith'

*Folger Shakespeare Library,
Smyth Letters 3*

¹ i.e. cuffs to match the ruff which were fashionable at this time.

² A girdle was a belt or band around the waist for suspending objects such as a sword or knife.

**114. STEPHEN SMITH TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT LONG
ASHTON**

LINCOLN'S INN, 5 JULY 1620

'Sir, Hedges the Carier hath a Scarlet sute for you in a box trimed up as plainly as the fashion wold admit, and as neatly as your tailor's invention or my furtherance cold enable him to doe it. It had beene with you 3 or 4 daies since if Mr Claxton had beene then provided of such a Scarlet as this hee now adventures to commend unto you. Since you were pleased to approve of my judgement in the choise of a beaver¹ and to commaund my paines therein I have sent you one as good and fashionable as my credit cold procure. Bycause I did not directly knowe the size of your head I have made by bargain for that if it fit you not I shall have the money back againe I paid for it, which was 2 peeces.* I know not whether you desired a band to it or noe, and if one whether that gold or silver or one both gold and silver. Mr Cocks hath discharged all you commaunded him and hath alsoe paid mee for your beaver. Your old servant Mr Samuell tells me you are too good a customer to loose, and therefore to continue his credit with you hath willingly exchaunged your blacke boots for a russet paire which you shall find in the box. I intended to have sent paires of Boules to Ashton before mee but your many invitations of mee thither have soe prevailed with mee that unlesse they have a passage cleere from all rubbs I shall be two to one to out run them. I must not at this time present you with more than my marginall newes least I pumpe myselfe so dry as that I be not able to entertaine you with any discourse at my coming to Ashton, till when and ever after you have the heart and may have the service of your well-wisher

Ste. Smith

Lincolns Inne July 5 1620'

* Note in the margin at this point:

'In regard that our man hath engrossed the whole traffique of Beaver into his hands they are grown extraordinarie deare, but the King (as the report saith) will take order by proclamation that noe beavers shall be worn but by men of certaine quality and that himself, the prince and my Lord of Buckingham will give the first example of wearing felts.² For the certainty of this report I dare not say too much, but that it is reported is most certaine.'

*Folger Shakespeare Library
Smyth Letters 4*

¹ Beaver hat, originally made of beaver skin, but from the sixteenth century made of felted beaver fur and wool. Worn by both men and women; hats and caps were worn by men indoors for all formal occasions, and beaver hats were particularly fashionable, and very expensive. Hatbands of silk cord or circlets of gold or silver were also fashionable, hence the reference to 'a band'.

² Felt was used as a general term for any kind of hat, and is obviously intended to apply here to cheaper hats of inferior quality.

115. SIR ROBERT TYNTE¹ TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT
BRISTOL

‘YOGHALL’ [IRELAND] 25 AUGUST 1621

‘Sir, Havinge the shorte advantage of this Hastie Messinger being now bownd aboard I cannot now att Lardg relate the mischance of a sonne of mine unhappilie fallen amongst cosseners and cheated of 12 peeces. I understand they were apprehended by your warrant and committed, but brake prison. Yett left under your power certayne horses, of some good value. Sir, I am now imbouldened to trouble you with thes lines though a stranger, yett havinge the attribute of your Cuntriman and neighbour; I desyer you wilbe pleased that ether by the cheators (if they may be gotten) or by the horses in your possession ther may be restitution to the youth as well as of the 12 peeces as of £50 spent in ther persuit. Sir you shall binde me to much thankfulness and have power to commande your affectionat frend

Robert Tynte

Sir, What satisfaction may be gotten I desyer may be ether to the maior of Bristoll or to my brother Edward Tynte.’

4/105

¹ Sir Robert Tynte of Youghal in southern Ireland was the brother of Edward Tynte of Wraxall and Chelvey in north Somerset.

The Visitation of Somerset 1623 *Harleian Soc.*, XI, 1876, p. 113.

116. ELIZABETH SMITH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT OXFORD¹
ASHTON 14 MAY 1622

‘My deare Tom, I doe expecte this nighte to hire from you, knowing you will not forget a mother that longes to hire how you endured to your journeyes ende, for the delittes you dayely beholde I pray make the like observation of all things worthey note as if you wear a travelor in a foraine country. I hope you will be carefull for your healthe, which I must still put you in mynde of. I thanke God wee all hire are in health, but I shall thincke the tyme longer till your father returne, then your selfe will doe. If you see any of my Brothers let me be remembered kindly to them, and to my best Cosen french,² Sir Edward Gorges, whom I doe imagine by this tyme you have seene, and I doute not but he will make much of you. Thus Sweet harte prayeing to God to bless you with his best blessing, to his holy protection I comyte thee,
Ever resteing Thy most loveing and carefull mother

Eliza : Smyth

Aishton this 14 of Maye 1622

Remember my love to your good frend³.’

AC/C48/1

¹ Thomas Smyth, then aged 13, went to St John's College, Oxford in May 1622.

² Probably the same as the more usual cousin german, i.e. first cousin.

³ Probably a reference to Thomas' tutor, Thomas Atkinson, see Letter 123 note I.

**117. ELIZABETH SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ST
JOHN'S COLLEGE, OXFORD**

ASHTON 19 MAY 1622

'Deare Tome, I have at last reseed thy two letters, but the furst last, and am glad to hire that you are so stronge a man, able to endure so longe wayes and ille weather as you found, but much comforted that the Doctors finde no such infermity in you, but may easely be redressed, I hope, with your owne care and a lettell of the advise withall which I must charge you to follow, hopeinge God hath apointed this meane to increase your health and strength that you may long live to be a comfort to your parents and to doe good to others when wee are gonne. I willbe very carefull in sendeing dayely untel I reseve your Globes, and must comend you for bestowing your stoke so well, for this will aford you pleasure of contenance, when other toyes would have soun decayed, and have ben nether use-full long for bodie nor minde. I am glad you have seen my frends in the town, and am sure if they wher them selves they were glad to see you, for my sake, have a great care of over heateing your selfe in your journey home. I hope you shall myte this letter on the waye. Thus dear Tom with my harty prayers to God to bless thee, now and ever I rest,

Thy most loveing Mother

Eliza : Smyth

Ashton this 19 of Maye 1622'

AC/C48/2

**118. STEPHEN SMITH TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT LONG
ASHTON**

LONDON 3 JUNE 1622

'Noble Sir, I congratulate your safe returne. Mr Bettie¹ tells me he hath provided an excellent paire of garters for you. I have bespoke your boot-hose but cannot be assured of them till this weeke's end. Sir Thomas Terringham² will be cairful to get you a chapman for your horses: and if he might but knowe who it is that seekes soe much commaund over you at your Musters, he wold trie his power with my Lord Chamberlaine to free you of that service. The lieutenants (he tells mee) you neede not care for, the horse belong to the Captaine only. He disires a word or two in writing of this your desire and against whom you desire it. If the Captaine of the horse be your rumir he knowes not which way to free you from his

power: but, for the lieutenants, he wee [sic] will undertake it. I must
crave leave to stile myself,

Your humblest servant,
Ste. Smith

London June 3 1622.'

*Folger Shakespeare Library
Smyth Letters 6*

¹ Mr Bettie or Betty was Sir Hugh's tailor.

² Sir Thomas Terringham or Tyringham of Tyringham in Buckinghamshire master of the Buckhounds to James I, had married Frances Gorges, one of the daughters of Sir Thomas Gorges and sister to Sir Hugh Smyth's wife Elizabeth.

**119. STEPHEN SMITH TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT LONG
ASHTON**

LONDON 7 NOVEMBER 1622

Is sorry to learn that Sir Hugh's illness prevents him coming to London. 'I have returned your dagger to Mr Morgan, and had sent your tobacco ere this but that I suspect your phisitions have dissuaded you from the use of it.' He has made enquiries for an honest servant for Sir Hugh, but so far unsuccessfully. Promises to perform any other services within his power.

*Folger Shakespeare Library
Smyth Letters 7*

**120. THOMAS SMITH¹ TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
3 FEBRUARY 1623**

Thanks him for his kind letter and looks forward to a visit by Sir Hugh and his wife. Has been informed that Sir Nicholas Haswell will shortly sell his farm and tenements at Ashton, and were he not already £1,000 in debt he would be forward to purchase the farm. Asks if Sir Hugh and 'my gossop Claxton'² will lend him the money at interest to buy the farm.

AC/C54/1

¹ Thomas Smith of Hough in Cheshire who had married Sir Hugh's eldest daughter Mary.

² See Letter 102, note 5.

121. SIR FERDINANDO GORGES' TO SIR HUGH SMYTH
LONDON 8 JULY 1623

Has received his letter and writes to urge him not to withdraw his money from a project in New England in which they are both involved.

' . . . you may bee pleased to remember that when I first motioned you about those busines, itt was not to abuse you with talles of I know not what, butt to give you sattisfaction by a free relation of that wherein I had allreaddie spent many hundreds of pounds, without repentance of what was past. For that I had mannifest hopes of good to ensue as well to my Countrie and freinds as to my particular, neither was I deceived in my expectation, as by experience itt appeares, for itt hath allreddie employed some hundreds of our Nation, men, Woemen and Children, besides 50 or 60 saile of shippes this last yeare. And your opinion then concurring with mine made you engage your selfe to mee, to hould a part with others. And your engagement with theirs, hath brought mee upon the Stage for all the estate I have. If all should doe as you disire to doe, their honnors would as well perishe as my fortunes bee ruined'.

Continues at length to urge Sir Hugh not to withdraw from a project which he has already agreed to take part in, upon which four or five thousand pounds has already been spent and wherein many noble persons are engaged.

AC/C45/1

¹ Sir Ferdinando Gorges was the younger son of Edward Gorges of Wraxall, for details of his eventful career and involvement in the colonisation of the New World see R.A. Preston, *Gorges of Plymouth Fort*, Toronto, 1953 and C.M. McInnes, *Ferdinando Gorges and New England*, Bristol Branch of the Historical Association, 1965. See also letter from Sir Ferdinando Gorges to the Mayor of Bristol concerning the New England scheme 13 October 1621, P. McGrath, Records relating to the Society of Merchant Venturers in the City of Bristol in the Seventeenth Century, *Bristol Record Society*, XVII, 1952, p. 201.

122. SIR FERDINANDO GORGES TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT
ASHTON

LONDON 16 JULY 1623

Has received his last letter by his servant Ball.

' . . . I have sayd so much in my first as I shall need to trouble you noe farther in this, onely I am sorrye you have casheered yourself out of so pious and so hopefull a business. Butt he is onely fitt for itt to whom God gives the Spiritt to undergoe itt. And seeing itt is nott our fortune to enjoye your companye, I can butt be as sorrye for itt as you wilbe when

you shall understand the wronge you doe yourself in itt.'

AC/C45/2

123. THOMAS ATKINSON¹ TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT LONG ASHTON

OXFORD, 4 AUGUST 1623

The opportunity of sending a letter by Mr Betty enables him to write,
'for I esteeme all business below my respect for you.'

The messenger will be able to give an account of Thomas Smyth's progress.

'Hee is (God bee thanked) in good health and behaves himselfe in so plausible a manner that it cannot but make you glad to heare itt, and mee proud to report itt.'

AC/C44/1

¹ Thomas Atkinson was Thomas Smyth's tutor at St John's College Oxford. He had himself matriculated at St Johns in 1615 at the age of 16, and proceeded to B.A. in 1619 and M.A. in 1623. Joseph Foster, *Alumni Oxonienses 1500-1714*, 1891, Vol I, p. 42; *D.N.B.*, II, p. 225-226.

124. THOMAS SMYTH TO SIR HUGH SMYTH IN CHESHIRE ASHTON 30 SEPTEMBER 1623

Assures his father of his constant desire to please him and to avoid negligence or disobedience. Sends news of the sermon preached by Mr Tucker¹, and of the arrival of his sister Rogers 'with her little Ned' from Cannington.² Hopes soon to see Sir Hugh safely returned.

AC/C43/1

¹ Thomas Tucker was vicar of Long Ashton 1623-1638, J. Collinson *op. cit.*, II, p. 299; F.W. Weaver, *Somerset Incumbents*, Bristol, 1889, pp. 231-232.

² Thomas Smyth's sister Helena was married to Sir Francis Rogers of Cannington; 'her little Ned' refers to their eldest son, Edward Rogers.

125. THOMAS ATKINSON TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
ST JOHN'S COLLEGE, OXFORD, 24 APRIL 1624

Reports that he has been zealous in his search for a better chamber for them and has at last procured Mr Barnaby's. The bed they already have will be satisfactory 'as long as wee have roome enough and may be asunder in the hott weather'. Thomas is to send bedding and all else necessary, 'all utensils belonging to a chamber, as Napkins, Tablecloths, Carpett and the like.'

Refers to Thomas' enquiry about his gown:

'You must have eleven yards of halfe-yeard-broad stuffe, and a yeard 3 quarters and a naile of Velvett to face itt with. For the lace I can send you nothing certaine, for the quantity will alter according to the diverse trimming of itt. If itt bee laced barely with two about itt, then two dozen and a halfe wilbe enough; if itt bee with two about the skirts, and laid over thick with lace upon the sleeves, then five dozen will scarce suffice. But I think the newest fashion wilbe best; which is not in making (for the sleeve) unlike to Sir Hugh's nightgowne (if I remember itt aright) and the trimming with buttons much like that; so that if you will have itt so, you may conjecture upon the number of buttons and loopes by the proportion of his gowne to yours, and then for the lacing about the sides two dozen and a halfe (as I said before) wilbee enough. I received your trunke and have itt safe. Itt is a good resolution to send your bedding this weeke, and pray loose no time but come after itt as soone as you may, that you may both have the benefitt of this terme (which ends 3 or 4 daies after the Ascension) and that you may bee the better arm'd for the Colledge exercise.'

Excuses himself from writing more because of pressure of urgent business, 'my hands are still so full of itt, that I cannot borrow so much time as to tell you what itt is.' Sends commendations to Sir Hugh and Lady Smyth, Sir Thomas and Lady Smyth, Lady Rogers and Mr and Mrs Tucker.

'Mr Bailly, Mr Ballard, Mr Edwards¹ and divers others desire to bee remembered by name in all service to Sir Hugh Smyth and in all love to you.'

AC/C 44/2

¹ Richard Baylie of St John's College, B.A. 1605, M.A. 1609, B.D. 1616, D.D. 1633; President of St John's 1632. Later a Canon of St Pauls and Dean of Salisbury. Joseph Foster, *Alumni Oxonienses 1500-1700*, I, p. 91.

There were at least two Ballards at St John's College at this time and it is not clear which is referred to here, *Ibid.*, I, pp. 63-64.

John Edwards of St John's College, B.A., 1621, M.A. 1625. Later Headmaster of Merchant Taylor's School. *Ibid.*, II, p. 448.

**126. THOMAS ATKINSON TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT
ASHTON.**

ST JOHN'S COLLEGE, OXFORD. 17 MAY 1624

Assures Sir Hugh of his constant remembrance and service, and of his diligence in looking after Thomas Smyth.

AC/C 44/3

**127. THOMAS ATKINSON TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
ST JOHN'S COLLEGE, OXFORD 27 MAY 1624**

Writes at length of his gratitude to Sir Hugh for his many kindnesses, and assures him of his desire to be of service to him. Sends news of the wellbeing of Thomas.

'Hee looks, and likes, and does very well. I know his own goodness will be a guard sufficient to keepe him out of harmes way; and yet hee doth not want my best care, nor the eies or wishes or endeavour of a great many friends . . .

I was ever an enemy to plodding in any one, most of all in a Gentleman. And I know itt is not your intent to have him earne his bread by his books. When you left him here I tooke upon mee the charge of a Gentleman, I shall blush to returne him you again a meere Scholler. If God say Amen to my intentions I will better him every way to my poore power, and I wilbee guilty of nothing which may either impaire his health or understanding'.

Sends commendations from Mr Baily, and promises to send Mr Sherborn's¹ sermon as soon as he can transcribe it.

AC/C 44/4

¹ William Sherborne (1595–1679), fellow of St John's College, later a canon of Hereford and chancellor of Llandaff. Joseph Foster, *op. cit.*, IV, p. 1347.

**128. THOMAS ATKINSON TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
12 JUNE 1624**

Writes to assure Sir Hugh of his love and devotion. Informs him that Thomas is making good progress and gives good hopes for the future.

AC/C 44/5

**129. THOMAS ATKINSON TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
14 JUNE 1624**

Writes at length of his desire to please Sir Hugh. Informs him that Thomas continues to do well.

'I should be sorry to see him do amisse; and when I do, if there bee not an assurance of a speedy reformation, I would not bee backward to informe you of itt. But he is as farre from deserving to be thought guilty in that way, as I shall be loath to know itt . . . '.

Refers again to Mr Sherborn's sermon, and hopes soon to see Sir Hugh in Oxford.

AC/C 44/6

**130. THOMAS ATKINSON TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
ST JOHN'S COLLEGE, OXFORD 30 JUNE 1624**

Sends news of Thomas' progress

'I hope you will hold to your resolution to come and bee an eiewitness of my faith herein; and to heare what repute your Sonne's good carriage hath gained him in the Colledge . . . '.

Mentions the commendations of 'Mr Baily and the rest of your Remembrancers'. Mr Sherborn's sermon is transcribed and will be sent by the Oxford carrier.

AC/C 44/7

**131. THOMAS ATKINSON TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
4 JULY 1624**

Writes to express his service and devotion to Sir Hugh.

AC/C 46/8

**132. THOMAS ATKINSON TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
ST JOHN'S COLLEGE, OXFORD 29 JULY 1624**

Sends further news of Thomas' good progress.

' . . . his dutifull demeanour to you and his good parts will make him worth your owning . Hee wants neither my praiers nor my endeavours . . . '.

AC/C 44/9

**133. STEPHEN SMITH TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
LONDON 1 AUGUST 1624**

Sir Hugh's sword is almost ready, but was not completed in time for Betty to bring it to Ashton, so it will have to be sent by the Carrier. The gloves will be sent in the same way. Ned Smith sends his service to Sir Hugh.

*Folger Shakespeare Library
Smyth letters 8.*

**134. EDWARD GORGES¹ TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
LANGFORD 12 AUGUST 1624**

Thanks Sir Hugh for his kindness and hospitality at Ashton and informs him that they have returned safely to Langford. Hopes soon to hear of Lady Rogers' safe delivery.

Lord Salisbury and his Lady have arrived at Cranborne; Lord Montgomery will shortly be at Wilton. Hopes soon to see Sir Hugh and 'yf my cosin Tom doe come from Oxford, I hope my sister will spare him to come to Langford also'.²

AC/C 46/1

¹ Edward Gorges, Lord Gorges of Dundalk was the eldest son and heir of Sir Thomas Gorges and Hellena Marchioness of Northampton. R. Gorges, *op. cit.* pp. 140–149.

² This letter has on it various notes in English, French and Latin, and calculations, in a different hand. There is also endorsed an inaccurate copy of the original letter, signed not by the author but by Thomas Smyth, as though Thomas had used it to practise his handwriting and signature.

**135. THOMAS ATKINSON TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
ST JOHN'S COLLEGE, OXFORD 16 AUGUST 1624**

Writes to assure Sir Hugh that although it has been very hot there is no contagious disease in the University or the City, and that 'in this regard Oxford is safer for him than Ashton, since as I heare, the small poxe raignes all about you even unto death'. If Thomas shows any signs of sickness or indisposition they will leave Oxford immediately but meanwhile he can take part in the College exercise until All Hallows, when they may both come to Ashton to spend the

hardest part of the winter there. The President and Mr Parsons¹ send their service.

AC/C 44/10

¹ The President of St John's College from 1621 to 1633 was William Juxon later Bishop of London, see *Victoria County History, Oxfordshire*, III, 1954, p. 258. For Philip Parsons see Letter 149, note 1.

**136. THOMAS ATKINSON TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
ST JOHN'S COLLEGE, OXFORD 23 AUGUST 1624**

Sets out at length his gratitude to Sir Hugh and desire to do him service.

AC/C 44/11

**137. THOMAS SMYTH TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
ST JOHN'S COLLEGE, OXFORD 23 AUGUST 1624**

Mentions letters he has received via Mr Betty.

'And for my owne inclination I have wholly squared itt to your pleasure either to stay heere a little longer or upon your command to repaire forthwith to Ashton'.

AC/C 43/2

**138. THOMAS ATKINSON TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
ST JOHN'S COLLEGE, OXFORD 15 SEPTEMBER 1624**

Continues in fulsome language to assure Sir Hugh of his devotion and service, and of his inability to express adequately his gratitude. Refers to Thomas' continued progress and improvement in strength of body and ability of mind.

AC/C 44/12

**139. ELIZABETH SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ST
JOHN'S COLLEGE, OXFORD
ASHTON, 24 SEPTEMBER 1624**

Writes to inform him that they are all well, and 'much comforted at the wellcome newes of your health and of the falshood of the reports of Oxford's deasses'.

'I understand you have ben a courtier of late, it was wonderous well done of you to take the oportunitie of the tyme and place to show your selfe thanckful to my brother Terringham for his former kindness to you at London. . . . It semeth that ther was good notice taken of you by the better sorte that was ther, for the Lord Montgomery tould your father that he saw you ride hard and him selfe and others speake much good of you, by this you may see that beinge in the best company, it will prove most advantageous to you, and these good partes they note to be in you in this your youthe, will make you the better esteemed and observed by them hireafter, if it please God you come to live amongst them as I hope you may, I cannot expresse the joye that I reseve by the good reports I hire of you,'

AC/C 48/3

**140. THOMAS ATKINSON TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
ST JOHN'S COLLEGE, OXFORD 9 OCTOBER 1624**

Has had but little time to write because of pressure of business.

'Sir Richard Burnaby his beeing in Towne commands my waiting upon him, and my being Steward in the Colledge inforceth my attendance upon itt, the first day of tearme (as this is) calls mee to St Maries, and many urgent occasions of mine owne would have mee stay att home. Add to this W. Yong his coming in late, and his going away early. All these infinitely distract mee'

Refers to Sir Hugh's enquiry about a servant and promises to try to find one, although 'I do little better than dispaire of furnishing you with so good a one as you deserve, or I could wish'.

Mentions that Tom Michaell sends his service.

AC/C 44/13

**141. THOMAS ATKINSON TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
ST JOHN'S COLLEGE, OXFORD 18 OCTOBER 1624**

Thanks Sir Hugh at length for his favours and kindness.

Sends remembrances from the President, Mr Baylie, Mr Ballard and Mr Edwards.¹

AC/C 44/14

¹ See Letter 125 note 1, and Letter 135 note 1.

**142. SAMUEL GORGES¹ TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
LONDON 3 DECEMBER 1624**

Writes from his lodging in Mr Betty's house to send the latest news to Sir Hugh. An ambassador has arrived from France called 'Mounseir Viloclee'², but his errand is not yet known. The Duke of Buckingham is to go to France during January 'to fetch home the Madam for the Prince, if that ould fox Gondomer who I heare is newly come to Paris do not turne the tyde, but his eggs will prove addle or the ballet is false'.

Two Dukes have been shot in the court of the Archduchesse, the Duke de Croy and the Duke de Ashcett, both grandees of Spain. 'By the time Count Mansfeild comes over into Flanders they of indifferent religion wilbe ready for a Revolt'. All the English forces are ordered to assemble at Dover by 24th December.

'I doubt not but my brother Tynt hath already tould you he is to paie you a payre of gloves for laying wagers of mens' heights'.

36074/106a

¹ Samuel Gorges of Wraxall, nephew of Sir Ferdinando and younger brother of Sir Robert Gorges. R. Gorges, *op. cit.*, pp. 168–9.

² A reference to M. Villeauxclaris, Secretary of State and Ambassador from the King of France who arrived in England in October 1624, *Acts of the Privy Council*, 1623–25, pp. 342, 380.

**143. SAMUEL GORGES TO SIR HUGH SMYTH
LONDON 8 SEPTEMBER [1624]**

Sends remembrances from Lord Gorges, and further news to be added to his previous letter.

‘ . . . in France there was a Certayne Prince of the blood called Count de Shrusseune¹ who being hertofore a suter to a great rich Lady, his sute was hendered by the King of Fraunce, who married his brother unto her, and because this Mounseirs wrath was kindled, the King sought to appease him by a promise he made unto him that he should marry that Lady his sister that the Prince² is now assured. The newes whereof is so distasteful to this great Count that he is most discontentedly gon away from the Court and threateneth to be fullie revenged’.

36074/106 b

¹ Louis de Bourbon, Comte de Soissons, an unsuccessful suitor for the hand of Henrietta Maria who was married to Charles I 11 May 1625.

² i.e. Prince Charles, later Charles I of England.

**144. THOMAS ATKINSON TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
ST JOHN'S COLLEGE, OXFORD. 11 APRIL 1625**

Wishes Sir Hugh a good journey from Salisbury and a safe arrival at Ashton. Sends assurance of his continued gratitude and service.

AC/C 44/15

**145. KATHERINE GORGES¹ TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT
ASHTON**

LANGFORD 4 JULY 1625

Is glad to hear he has recovered his health. She herself has been ill but is now much better and hopes to come to Ashton during the summer. ‘And you shall see, we will take such a course, that your bucks shall not dye altogeather of there rest and fattness’.

Sends love to her cousin Rogers and her husband. ‘We should both be glad to see hir at Langford, entreating hir to bring hir tow litle jewells with hir’.

AC/C 47/1

¹ Katherine Gorges wife of Edward Lord Gorges of Langford. She was the daughter of Sir Robert Osborne of Kelmarsh, Northamptonshire.

146. SAMUEL GORGES TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
8 JULY [1625]

Has been unable to accomplish what Sir Hugh desired, but has consulted with Betty on the matter.

‘I have inquired also after a servant, such a one as you desired, I can yet comend none unto you, many young and inexperienct men hath offered themselves unto me, whose frinds and fortunes I understand not, I know you will not like them. When I heare of one for your purpose I will send you word, I will rather wish you none than wish one unfitt your employments’.

Assures Sir Hugh of his constant service and regard.

36074/106 c

147. EDWARD GORGES TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
LANGFORD 23 JULY 1625

Has returned as speedily as possible from his business in Northamptonshire and Lincolnshire in order to visit Sir Hugh.¹ ‘But now that it hath pleased God to visite you with sicknes, it is no smale greefe unto me; and I know such a troupe, at such a tyme would bringe more trouble than comfort’.

Sends best wishes for his speedy recovery.

AC/C46/2

¹ Edward Gorges was involved in a major, though ultimately disastrous, project for draining part of the Fens of Lincolnshire. For a letter from Edward Gorges to Sir Robert Phelps seeking his support for a parliamentary bill concerning his drainage work in the Lincolnshire marshes 1621, see S.R.O., Phelps MSS SS/PH/212/39.

148. EDWARD GORGES TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
LANGFORD 4 AUGUST 1625

‘Whilst I was with you at Ashton, there came downe a Commission from my Lord Admirall for the restoringe of the Portugal and goodes (I made staye of a Hurst) to the trew owners agayne: so that I was forced to goe thether my selfe and to see all business cleared, for feare of any tricks to be putt upon me or my compaignie there. And now I thanke God after many hott skirmishes (which were ended in Renish wine and sugar) wee are at last parted fayre’.¹

Sends best wishes for Sir Hugh's health and greetings to 'my cosen Tom', and to his sister and Lady Rogers.

AC/C 46/3

¹ For a reference to this incident see *Calendar of State Papers (Domestic)* 1625–26, p. 51.

**149. PHILIP PARSONS¹ TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
ST JOHN'S COLLEGE, OXFORD 2 OCTOBER 1625**

'Right Worthye Sir, My love and service with all due respecte remembered unto you etc. I understand it is your pleasure to have a Receite from mee which I use to administer to cause sleepe. From the thoughte of deniall whereof I am so farre that I am very glad my streightened abilityes may any way gratifye you. Neyther have I yet learned the queinte tricke of our Physitions who eyther to enhaunce the opinion of their Phisicke or to secur a larger fee from their patients are very daynty in revealinge their secrets. Or if I had learned this arte, yet I could not practise it towards your worthye selfe, whose curtesyes chalinge from mee my best respects. I have therefore fitted the receite to your presente purpose, and have sent it here inclosed.² Yet I wish Sir, that you may be so happye, as not to have the occasion to make use of it, or if you have, that it may produce the desired effecte. It is both cordiall, comfortable to the stomacke and gently moves rest, and to that ende you may safely take it twice or thrice a weeke (as need shall require) when you are going to bed, or if you please you may differre the takinge of it till mid-night, at which tyme if you perceive no inclination to rest then drinke it of and compose your selfe to sleepe. For it is best in this kind first to trie what Nature will doe of her Selfe and if shee performe not our desires, then to helpe her by Medicine.

I wish you Sir, a sounde and confirmed health; to which if my Physicke may any adde, this good success will in my owne thoughts make mee sette a high estimate upon it. And so praying for all happiness upon your worthy family, I most humbly take my leave and rest.

Ever at your worship's service,
Philip Parsons³

36174/107

¹ Philip Parsons was born in London in 1594 and educated at Merchant Taylors school and St John's College Oxford. He became a Fellow of St John's in 1618. In 1633 he became Principal of Hart Hall where he remained till his death in 1653. Joseph Foster, *Alumni Oxonienses* 1891, Vol. III, p. 1123.

² The recipe does not survive with the letter.

³ The letter is endorsed in pencil with a memorial inscription to Sir Hugh Smyth who died 28 July 1680 and to his wife Dame Anne Smyth who died 16 June 1698.

**150. EDWARD GORGES TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
LANGFORD 7 NOVEMBER 1625**

Is pleased to hear of the improvement in Sir Hugh's health.

The horses arrived too late to be shown to the courtiers and no one else in those parts is willing to lay out so much money. He will, however, do his best to sell them.

'We have had this long tyme a great Court with us both of Kinge and Queene. The Kinge went away a weeke agoe, and thanks bee to God, the Queene is this day upon hir remove. So that now we shalbe freed of much trouble and have more leisure to visite and send to one another'.

AC/C 46/4

**151. KATHERINE GORGES TO SIR HUGH SMYTH
LANGFORD 5 DECEMBER 1625**

Is pleased to hear of Sir Hugh's recovery of health and that he has been to see a bowls match played on his bowling green. Her husband had intended to set out for Ashton but 'being at the race he tooke cold which did soe encrease his looseness that he durst never since venture abroad'.

AC/C 47/2

**152. KATHERINE GORGES TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT
ASHTON
LANGFORD 7 DECEMBER 1625**

Is glad to hear from Mr Chamberlayne that Sir Hugh is in better health and wishes they lived closer so that they could visit more frequently.

'I can not but let you know what a great courtiar I was like to have bin, and had barganed with my husband that he should keep home, and I to ride abroad, and my Lady Denbeigh my old acquaintance and Kinswoman lyvinge at Langford, would needs have me promise hir that I wold goe to see the Queen and the Masque, on Sunday night was fortnight, where I saw the Masque acted by the Queen's servants all French, but it was disliked of all the English for it was neither masque nor play, but a French antique; and for the French ladies the elder sorte that are nearest hir Majestie are something like to Nurse Ball only Nurce is a little handsomer, but whether it was the sight of the Masque, or the old French

ladies I know not, but I cam home the next day soe sicke that I kept my Chamber 3 or 4 dayes after and soe weared with the Court that for ought I know I'le never desire to be Courtiar more; yet I receaved a great grace from the Queen for shée kissed me and that she doeth not useually doe to any, nor scarce speake to any Lady that speakes French to hir unless they be Papists. The Lady Denbeigh and the Lady Carlile was commanded by the king to waight on the Queen; but she will by noe meanes as yet admitt any Protastints to any place about hir. Soe all the English ladies are gon from hir Court except the Cowntes of Arrundell who is the greatest with the Queen of all English Ladies. Brother I desire the relation of this my courtiarshipp may make you smile'.

Thanks him for his gift of dainties and sends her good wishes to her brother and to her sister, her cousin Rogers and cousin Thomas.

AC/C47/3

**153. EDWARD GORGES TO SIR HUGH SMYTH
LANGFORD 14 FEBRUARY 1626.**

Sends news of the coronation of Charles I.

'It is trew that there are 8 earles created and 50 or 60 knights of the Bathe were made at the coronacon. And if I could have prevayled that waye, assure your selfe you should soone have heard from mee. But it was only money could doe the feate; and havinge no comission from you in that kinde I did lett it rest'.

Reports that he has been unable to sell Sir Hugh's horses. Is concerned to hear of Sir Hugh's continuing ill-health and advises him to seek good counsel for the settling of his estate. Exhorts him to put away his melancholy.

'The which I much wonder you should bee possessed with at all; no man in temporall blessings havinge more cause of comfort than your selfe'.

AC/C 46/5

**154. EDWARD GORGES TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
TITCHBORNE PARK¹ 28 FEBRUARY 1626**

Sends news of Sir Hugh's horses. Is glad to hear that Sir Hugh has sufficiently recovered his health to accompany the Sheriff.

AC/C 46/6

¹ Tichborne in Hampshire.

**155. EDWARD GORGES TO SIR HUGH SMYTH
TITCHBORNE PARK 2 APRIL 1626**

Sends further report on Sir Hugh's horses.

'For my disparkinge of Tytchborne, it is trew I had some speach about it, but as yett I am not thoroughly resolved.¹ And for the occurrants of these tymes, I protest I heare nothinge as yett worth the impartnge'.

AC/C 46/7

¹ Edward Gorges was busy making schemes to recoup the losses he had incurred over the unsuccessful drainage projects in Lincolnshire, and in 1633 he was obliged to sell Tichborne, see R. Gorges, *op. cit.*, pp. 147-148.

**156. THOMAS SMYTH TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
ST JOHN'S COLLEGE, OXFORD 19 APRIL 1626**

Sends this letter by Mr Crosseman, and refers to his tutor being busy over the business of the proctorship.

'You are beholding to Mr Parsons for his often remembring you and I purpose as soone as this busie time is past to know (as beetwene him and my selfe) his opinion of your infirmities. In the interim and evar I will beseech almighty God that you may have no need of any of their skill, and that he will send you speedy recovery and continuance of health to the great comfort and uncessant desier of

Your most obedient and affectionate Sonne

Thomas Smyth'

36074/108

**157. THOMAS ATKINSON TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
ST JOHN'S COLLEGE, OXFORD 3 MAY 1626**

Hopes that Sir Hugh is restored to health and assures him of his prayers and devotion. Has no certain Oxford news except the good news that there is 'no suspecion of the Sicknes'.

'The most credible London news is that Sir Francis Stuart is banish't the Court, and cashier'd from his office for beeing too bold in his speeches of the Duke¹, to whom the King sticks so close that I heard a great and knowing man say within this 5 daies hee verily thought all the Parliament could do was not able enough to move him'.

Adds news of Thomas' good progress and remembrances from Mr

Baily, Mr President, Mr Parsons and Mr Edwards.²

AC/C44/16

¹ The Duke of Buckingham.

² See Letters 125 note 1., and 135 note 1.

**158. THOMAS SMYTH TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
ST JOHN'S COLLEGE, OXFORD. 3 MAY 1626**

Writes to assure his father that there is no sickness in Oxford.

' . . . there is not one person sicke, nor house shutt upp in the whole towne. And yett there are some few in the Cabbines, and, as itt is thought if they should not bee pull'd downe, they would not want guests this yeare. For the poore people (amongst whom the sicknesse hath wholly beene) are growne so wickedly cunning, as to feigne themselves infected, and to goe to the pesthouses, because they are suer to bee there well releived with victualls. You may bee confident that longer than I shall see the towne for my safety I will not stay; and if itt should prove dangerous, you shall heare itt by a speedy messenger. In the meane time I will wholly imploy my selfe to those courses which shallbe most for my good. And whilst I so do I doubt not but I shall reasonably well deserve the greate charge you have beene and are now att with mee. You may be confident of my uncessant prayers for you and of my willingnesse in all things to show myselfe

Yours truly affectionate and obedient Sonne
Thomas Smyth'

AC/C 43/3

**159. HENRY O'BRIEN EARL OF THOMOND¹ TO SIR HUGH
SMYTH AT ASHTON**

LONDON 17 —² 1626

Sends his good wishes to Sir Hugh and his lady and assures him of
'the well wishes of your constant Frend that wishes you all happiness, and should be most glad to enjoy your company heare'.

36074/110

¹ Henry O'Brien, 5th Earl of Thomond, Burke's *Complete Peerage*, 1953 ed., XII Pt. I, pp. 707–708. See also Letter 172.

² Month illegible.

160. ELIZABETH SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ST JOHN'S COLLEGE, OXFORD.

ASHTON 19 MAY 1626

'Deare Tom, Being this morninge in my bed, your father risinge early to goe to the well¹, I could not let this or any messenger pase with out some few lines. This is the first day of his goinge to the watter but he hath had it brought home to drinke. He sayth he findes much good by it, and intends if health and strength come apase shortly to see Langford. Your sister Rogers is to goe to Canington the nexte weeke. If it holde you may imagine what good company wee are like to have hire. For hire comes not any but such as are sent for, and coler² dothe as much abound with us as ever it ded, God increase my patience to endure it stille, whiche for your sake and the hopes I have of great comfort in you now and hireafter makes me now sufer. Commend me to Mr Atkinson. Thus I leave you to your beste studies, praying God to blese and prosper you in all good you shall take in hand, which hopes are the only comforte of

Yours moste affectionate Mother, E.S.

Aishton this 19 of May 1626

Your sister Rogers commends her to you and your tutor'.

AC/C 48/4

¹ Presumably this is a reference to the medicinal waters at Hotwells which were already attracting patronage at this time, see *Calendar of State Papers (Domestic)* 5th June 1630. See also V. Waite, *The Bristol Hotwell*, Bristol Branch of the Historical Association, 1960, p. 5.

² i.e. choler or anger and irascibility.

161. MARY SMITH¹ TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON

CHESTER 5 JUNE 1626

Sends news of her health and good wishes for his speedy recovery from his illness.

AC/C 53/1

¹ Sir Hugh's daughter who was married to Thomas Smith of Hough, Cheshire.

162. PAUL GODWIN³ TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON

KINGWESTON 26 JULY 1626

Sends by his son-in-law, Mr Woodhouse, his service and good wishes.

'If in perusing your papers you chaunce to meete with a written sermon of mine upon Revel. 13. 11, 12., I beseech you let me have it a weeke or 2, and I will restore it'.

The back of the letter has been used by Thomas Smyth to calculate his expenses at Warminster Assizes (£3 - 2 - 6), at Langford (18s. 0d.), at Hinton (£1 - 13 - 6), and at Redlynch (16s. - 6d.).

36074/1229

¹ Dr Paul Godwyn rector of Kingweston and a prominent Justice of the Peace in Somerset, see T.G. Barnes, *Somerset 1625-1640*, 1961, pp. 297-298, 314. In his will of 1627 Sir Hugh Smyth instructed that £20 which Dr Godwyn owed him 'shall be forgiven soe that he preach at my funeral'. S.R.O. DD/SAS (c1193) 5/1. See also P.M. Hembry, *The Bishops of Bath and Wells 1540-1640*, 1967, pp. 163-4.

163. JOHN POULETT TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
'from Mr Pallets this Munday night 12 August ——' (?1626)

Has just arrived from Shangham Park where he left the Master of the Rolls whose intention is to hunt tomorrow in Walton Park, and he requests Sir Hugh to join him there.²

Bristol Reference Library
B 28176

¹ This letter survives in the form of a transcript made during the early twentieth century by L.V. Way (Bristol Reference Library B 28176). The original is not among the Smyth letters in the Bristol Record Office, 'Mr Pallets' has not been identified.

² 'Shangham' is possibly a mis-reading of Sharpham which is adjacent to Walton near Glastonbury. The Master of the Rolls was Sir Julius Caesar, G.E. Aylmer, *The King's Servants*, 1961, p. 71.

164. EDWARD GORGES TO SIR HUGH SMYTH
LANGFORD 22 AUGUST 1626

Since his last letter he has been so 'tormented with a furious ague that neither my head nor hand can scarce give me leave to expresse it'. His wife also had been ill and confined to her chamber.

'And therefore the tyme of our cominge to the Bathe being so uncertayne, as when it shall please God to send us health and strength to performe the journey, we have thought it best to discharge the lodgings at Mr D. Jourdens, least we should requite his kindness with losse and hinderance to him or his'.

Hopes nonetheless to be sufficiently recovered to visit Bath while the weather is still suitable and Mr Claxton has promised to procure lodgings for them.

AC/C 46/8

**165. EDWARD GORGES TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
LANGFORD 14 OCTOBER 1626**

'Accordinge to your desier I have sent you the Ambler.¹ He hath sett the gray nagg you last gave me in so good a forwardnes that I assure my selfe use and a little tyme will bringe him to a perfect waye. In my opinion he is the best I have yett mett with in these partes. He is very carefull and diligent, and (as farr as I can perceave) no gadder abroad or haunter to ale howses. And for that he is so ragged a poore fellow, the lesse money will satisfie him'.

AC/C 46/9

¹ The 'Ambler' referred to is evidently a person and not a horse of that particular gait. Ambling horses were specially trained to go at an easy pace and horse breeders employed men to train their young horses. The emphasis upon the sobriety of the Ambler is interesting, as horse dealers and allied persons were commonly looked upon as rogues and drunkards by contemporaries. I am grateful to Dr Peter Edwards for information on this point.

**166. ELIZABETH SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ST
JOHN'S COLLEGE, OXFORD.**

[OCTOBER 1626]

Has received his letters of 24 September and 2 October.

'I understande by Mr Atkineson's letter to me that the tyme of your coming hether he desiers may be as soone after Allhalontide as we please. Sence it hath pleased your fater to refer your stayinge and returning to your owne considerations, let me now advise you to sett him downe a day certaine when you would have the horses to come for you, that you may be the redyer when he sends, and that he may provide to put of other such ocations for the use of horses at that tyme, if ther should be any. As concerning your Battles, I doe perseve your own carefullness to prevent all idel expenses, and yet to live like a gentleman of your owne degre, for the avoyding of keepeing company abrode, which would draw on charges is the more for your credit and good report with all that are good, and your father's profit. And in the end what you save to him will be gotten for your selfe, so that it be not basely spared. . . . I hope Betty toucke measure of you, beinge with you, that when he makes you winter clothes they may be bige inoughe.

I know you will have care to keepe your selfe as warme as you may when the cold weather comes in with such as you have. Remember your necke and feett. Thus prayinge to God to bless you in all your good courses, I reste in hast, your most lovinge Mother

E.S.

You sisters commends them to'.

AC/C 48/5

**167. EDWARD GORGES TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
LANGFORD 24 OCTOBER 1626**

Is sorry to hear of Sir Hugh's continuing illness, vomiting and sleeplessness. Discusses the business of settling his estate and the importance of securing a good counsel to effect this.

'I like well your purpose my Cousin Tom should see and somewhat know booth Towne and Court, and to that end, if you please to entrust him with me, I shall do my best, (so long as I shalbe in London) to informe him'.

AC/C 46/10

**168. THOMAS SMITH TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
CHESTER 4 NOVEMBER 1626**

Is sorry to hear of Sir Hugh's long illness, 'that (soe long) you have had an unwelcome Guest at Ashton'.¹ Hopes and prays for his speedy recovery.

AC/C 54/2

¹ A reference to Sir Hugh's continuing illness and melancholy.

**169. BARTHOLOMEW GIFFORD¹ TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT
ASHTON
LONDON 15 DECEMBER [1626]**

Sends his service to Sir Hugh and good wishes for his speedy recovery.

'There is a gentleman that lies hard by me that had a flux ij yeares and most commonly voyded blood. He was given over by all men, at last a Doctor toold him that he cur'd many that had been given over only with a

diett which was to eate rise [rice] as often as he coud conveniently in every kind of pottage or otherwise, with Cinnamon on them and to strow it on all kind of meate one eates, and also in drinke, and he bad him use it, and in reasonable time it absolutely cur'd him to the wonder of every one, for twas sayd he was dead many times in my owne knowledge'.

He would have willingly spent Christmas at Ashton, 'but the weather is so could that I durst not as yett aventure'. Sends news of the continuing bad relations between England and France and the probability of war; 'the Mariners still Murmur, still unpaid'.

'Sir lett me entreate you to make your selfe as mery as you can possible though you sometimes enforce it, as neere as you can avoyd solitarines, you will find it your best phisick . . . I had almost forgot, my Lord Carleton's² chamber was burned last night at Whitehall which made a great bussell'.

36074/109

¹ Bartholomew Gifford was Sir Hugh Smyth's nephew. S.R.O. DD/SAS (C1193) 5/1 p. 43. See also Letter 107.

² Sir Dudley Carleton, Viscount Dorchester, (1573–1632) Ambassador to Venice and the Hague, Secretary of State 1628–32, *D.N.B.* IX, pp. 87–90.

170. EDWARD GORGES TO SIR HUGH SMYTH

LANGFORD 19 DECEMBER 1626

Has at length arrived home from London after having spent a month there and not been well two days together during that time. Has taken advice in London concerning Sir Hugh's settlement of his estate, and sends a note of this advice by Mr Claxton.

'Having occasion to send to Martin Eling¹ for wine, if the gelt deere be yett fatt, my desier is that Arthure may bringe it a waye with him'.

AC/C 46/11

¹ The Eling family were Bristol wine merchants, see P. McGrath (ed.) *Merchants and Merchandise in Seventeenth Century Bristol*, Bristol Record Society, 1955, p. 4.

171. MARY SMITH TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON

? Cee 14 FEBRUARY [1627]

Thanks him for his enquiries about her health and for the sweet-

meats he has sent her. She has been obliged to get a wet nurse for her child. Assures him of her constant prayers for his health. At May Day she and her husband are to move to Chester.

‘... with an yell will on my side to goe to Chester with a resolution there to ende my days. I must confesse I have bin much against it, and stood of as long as I durst. I have had so yell lucke with my children and littell content my selfe, which made me so unwilling till I saw thare was noe remedy, the reson why we leave this place is Mr Smith thinkes he may live better cheape in a towne, and so may the sooner be a freeman. I pray God it may prove so’.

AC/C 53/2

**172. MARY THOMOND¹ TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
DRURY LANE, LONDON, 10 MARCH 1627**

She and her husband had hoped to see Sir Hugh in London and are deeply beholden to him for his favours. Sends news that the King and Council have sent an ‘embassage’ into France.

‘... a servant of the Duke of Buckingham’s which is a picture drawer,² and the answer to the embassade was returned back from the King of France by an other picture drawer, which argues that the two Kingdoms are in great distress of sufficien men for that purpose, but by reason of the King’s being at Newmarkett the effect of the answeare is not yet knowne, soe as at this time I am not able to write any further of yt’.

The Infanta of Spain and the Emperor’s son are to be matched together, and the Emperor has offered his daughter in marriage to the Palsgrave’s son; the conditions are that he shall have his country fully restored to him again. Captain Penington³ is gone to sea with a fleet of ten sail and a hundred more are making ready to go after them speedily, but where they are bound no one knows but God and the King.

36074/111

¹ Mary Thomond daughter of William Lord Brereton. Her husband was Henry O’Brien 5th Earl of Thomond. She addresses Sir Hugh as ‘Noble Brother’, but no relationship is known. See Letter 159.

² For a reference to the ‘French picture drawer’ acting on behalf of the French ambassador see *Calendar of State Papers (Domestic)*, 1629–1631, p. 332.

³ Captain, later Admiral, Sir John Pennington, see *D.N.B.*, XLIV, pp. 300–302.

173. WILLIAM HERBERT¹ TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON

WILTON 21 APRIL [1627]

Invites Sir Hugh to visit him and offers the use of a house two miles from Wilton and very convenient for hunting. Is ready to serve Sir Hugh in any way he can.

36074/113

¹ William Herbert 3rd Earl of Pembroke, of Wilton in Wiltshire. Herbert was a powerful friend of the City of Bristol, and in the spring of 1627 while he was at Bath, had received a gift of fruits and sweetmeats from the City. John Latimer, *Annals of Bristol in the Seventeenth Century*, 1900, p. 97.

174. THE EARL OF CASTLEHAVEN¹ TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON

IRELAND N.D. [? 1627]

Thanks Sir Hugh for his services and for 'a favor beyond any expectation of requitall'.

36074/114

¹ James Touchet 3rd Earl of Castlehaven.

**175. ROBERT PHELIPS¹ TO SIR HUGH SMYTH AT ASHTON
N.D. [? 1627]**

Assures Sir Hugh of his love and desire to serve him. Refers to 'Sir J.M.' and to Mr Hopton.² Intends to speak to them both shortly.

36074/112

¹ Sir Robert Phelips of Montacute. He had married Brigetta Gorges one of the sisters of Sir Hugh's wife, Elizabeth.

² 'Mr Hopton' is probably Ralph Hopton of Witham; 'Sir J.M.' has not been identified.

**176. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
WEEK¹ N.D. [1627]**

Apologies for not attending Sir Hugh Smyth's funeral². 'I am a little distempered with the journeys I have had of late and had phisicke in my belly yesterday and today'. He is obliged to travel to London again shortly. Sends thanks for 'The liberall proportion of blacks³ you weare pleased to alotte for me, wherein I esteeme the memory of your good will no lesse than if I had made use of them'.

36074/115

¹ Many of the following letters from Lord Poulett refer to 'Week' which was his house in the parish of Yatton in north Somerset later known as Court de Wick.

² Sir Hugh Smyth died 15 April 1627, three days after Thomas Smyth had married Lord Poulett's daughter Florence.

This hurried marriage was to prevent any intervention by the Court of Wards, since Thomas Smyth was only 18 years of age. See M.J. Hawkins (ed.), *Sales of Wards in Somerset 1603-1641*, *Somerset Record Society*, 67, 1965, p. xv. Also B.R.O. AC/S 13/ 1-4 36074/ 4a-c; P.R.O. C 142/438/130.

³ i.e. mourning garments.

**177. RICHARD PRICE [TO THOMAS SMYTH]¹
1 DECEMBER 1627**

Concerns the drawing up of 'my Lord Gorges descent' and painting his arms.²

On reverse: long Latin quotation, apparently in the same hand as the letter.

36074/159

¹ The address is torn off.

² See also Letters 265 and 343.

**178. THOMAS GORGES¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
ST ALBAN'S HALL, OXFORD. 18 DECEMBER 1627**

'This is Tho. Flemings night, his last farewell for Oxon. He has made me master of his fears, pardon my bouldnes, he has began your health three tymes and your bedfellowes the like'.²

Refers also to Thomas Atkinson, Proctor Haswill and Dr Lapworth.³

'Good Sir, make all things sure for your servants and kinsman: and if anything falls in the meene season think uppon Tho. Gorge by the way, no man more thankfull no man more humble. . . . If I live Ile pray for you, if not, forgive mee'.

Sends his service to 'my lady and Lady Rogers'.

Postscript: 'Tho. Fleming has writt his owne name, good soul hee is almost faces about,⁴ hee loves you hartily'.

AC/C 51/1

¹ For information on Thomas Gorges' career see Letter 209 note 1.

² Thomas Fleming, son of Sir Thomas Fleming of Stonham, Hampshire, matriculated at Magdalen College in 1625 aged 16, Joseph Foster, *op. cit.*, II, p. 507.

³ Edward Lapworth, a doctor of medicine and later Sedleian Professor of Natural Philosophy at Oxford. *Ibid.*, III, p. 882.

No reference has been found to 'Proctor Haswill'.

⁴ This probably means that Fleming was drunk.

179. THOMAS CHESTER¹ TO WILLIAM CLAXTON AT COMPTON DANDEY²

ALMONDSBURY 20 JANUARY 1628

'Worthey Sir, my owne Freenes hathe soe impoverished me that I am to seeke how to replennishe my wants. And to that end I purpose to make use of your wanted love. I understand that your Friend and mine Mr Smyth is distroyinge his conies in his Parke this slaughter time, Good sir, let me be soe much more bound unto you, that you would be pleased to give me your best assistance to procure me by your lettre or otherwise to any of Mr Smyth's men that hath dealinge there in 20^{ty} Cupple of breedinge doe conies for my money, and that you would give this bearer, my servant, the direction how to accomplish the same, by which larges of Frendshipp you shall engage me to a worthey requitall, and rest

Your unfayned Friend and servant

Tho: Chester.

Almondsbury xx Januari 1627.

36074/160

¹ Thomas Chester, Lord of the Manor of Almondsbury, see Samuel Rudder, *A New History of Gloucestershire*, 1779, p. 223. I am grateful to Mr John Moore for identifying the writer of this letter.

² Compton Dando.

**180. FLORENCE SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH 'at Mr Beety's
the taylors house by Temple Bar'**

ASHTON 21 JANUARY 1628¹

Writes to say how much she has missed him and hopes he will soon return.

'... since I talked with Dr Costin² I have bin mutch more confortd than I was before, for he told me that he was sartaine that it wold not be veri long after that you received his letter er you would com downe . . .'

Sends news of domestic and family affairs.

'Pray let thes few lines content you at this time and I hope that I shal make som other thing to send you the next tim besides a leter, in the menetime give me leve to say that I have ever sayd that I am your constan frend and wife

Florance Smyth.'

AC/C 60/1

¹ No information has been found about Dr Costin, other than the reference to him in Letter 213.

² This letter is dated 21 January 1626 i.e. 1627 N.S. This must be a mistake since Thomas Smyth married Florence eldest daughter of John, 1st Lord Poulett of Hinton St George in April 1627, and the letter has therefore been assumed to be properly dated 1628. It is possible however that the correct date is 21 January 1629 at which time Thomas Smyth was in London attending the second session of the Parliament.

**181. THOMAS ATKINSON TO THOMAS SMYTH
ST JOHN'S COLLEGE, OXFORD. 31 JANUARY 1628**

Refers to 'your Messenger who brought ye Grey-hounds'. Writes at length of his gratitude for the entertainment he received at Ashton, and of a fall which he had when returning.

AC/C 44/17

**182. THE MAYOR AND BURGESSES OF BRIDGWATER TO
LORD POULETT AT WEEK**

28 FEBRUARY 1628

'Maye it please your Lordship that this morninge wee have elected Mr Thomas Smythe (whoe is a Free Burgess of our Towne) to be one of our Burgesses for the next Parliament' and wee shall entreate your Lordshipp's favor to farther him and the Towne in those occacons that shalbe

needefull. And wee have some doubt that some maye be offended at that which is donne.² Yf therefore yt would please your Lordshipp to afford us a worde or twee to Sir John Stawell³ that he may be pleased (yf occacons require) to steed the towne the best he maye, wee shall accompt our selves bound unto your Lordshipp and shalbe ever ready with the best of our services to requite the same to the uttermost of our poore habilities, and thereof your Lordshipp may rest assured, and ever soe with the remembrances of our best service doe all rest and remayne, Your Lordshipp to be commanded,

William Sealy, Mayor, William Dey, Thomas Anthony, John Lockyer, Humfry Pitt, Richard Barratts, Anthonie Birkin, Richard Sporge, William Godbeare, S. Harvey, William Hill, George Gray, Richard Tuthill, Peter Quarrells, Jacob A.⁴

36074/47

¹ Parliament met 17 March 1628.

² Their concern may have been due to the fact that Thomas Smyth was only 18 years of age.

³ For Sir John Stawell or Stowell of Cothelstone see Letter 352 footnote 1.

⁴ End of the name is illegible.

183. MARY SMITH¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH

30 MARCH [1628]

Has received a letter from T.S. 'wherein I perceave you are a parlement man.'² Had things fallen out as it was expected your brother had mette you there, but for my one part I must confesse I was more angrey than sory he mised of it at this time'.

Hopes to come with her husband to Ashton as soon as she is able to ride on such a long journey. Sends her respects to Lord and Lady Poulett.

AC/C 53/6

¹ Thomas Smyth's sister. S.R.O. DD/SAS (C 1193) 5/1 MSS Genealogical Notes by H. Hobhouse, p. 60.

² Thomas Smyth had been elected member of Parliament for Bridgwater in February 1628, see Letter 182.

184. ELIZABETH SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH IN LONDON

'Leave this letter at Mr Betty the taylor's house without Temple Bare neare the signe of ye bleu ancker'.

ASHTON N.D. [? 1628]

Thanks him for writing weekly and is glad to know of the good health of himself and his wife,

'Wee have hard of some of your great business, but diversly reported, and many comes to enquier of me. I shall now, I thank you, be able to informe my frends truely, whiche you know in this place treu news is bothe dainty and, being good, wellcome, which God send us. And that the freedome may as well pase above as it dothe in the lower house'.

Sends news of family affairs and commendations to her daughter-in-law.

'The Red Lodge is presently to be sold and Mr Durocke Popely hath offered £680 for it. But it is thought that it will not goe much under £800, and yet it is sayd they are to make present sayle both of that and other lands for the payment of his debts being £2,300'.¹

AC/C 48/12

¹ Derricke Poply was a Bristol merchant and ship-owner, see P. McGrath (ed.), *Merchants and Merchandise in Seventeenth Century Bristol*, *Bristol Record Society*, XIX, 1955, p. 212. The Red Lodge had been built by Sir John Young c 1590. It is now in the care of Bristol City Museum.

185. ELIZABETH SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH

ASHTON N.D. [? 1628]

Discusses the purchase of various items of furniture, evidently for Ashton Court, including carpets, chairs, stools and hangings.

'... your persian carpet will deserve velvett chears and stolls and a sutte of new hangings. If you have all the carpetts and stolls for £45 as you writte I think you are well dealt with. If you chance to deale for hangings let me advise you to be sure to bey them depe, for hireafter if you alter this or live at Bristow house they may the fitter serve you. Your dininge chamber hire is ten footte and four inches'.

She also approves of his intention to buy 'stronge substantiall platte' since money spent on this 'will doe you more service and creditte then in your purse'. Refers to his intention to 'returne to live in the country' and hopes that he will so live that there will be no lack of

money. The work he has in hand at Ashton Court goes on well.
AC/C 48/10

**186. MARY SMITH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
CHESTER 26 FEBRUARY [? 1628]**

Takes the opportunity of being able to send a letter by Sir George Winter's man to tell him her family is well, though she herself has been confined to her chamber. Sends her respects 'to all at the Lower Court' and to T.S. and his family.

AC/C 53/3

**187. FRANCIS HAWLEY¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH IN LONDON
'at the Lord Poulett house in Petty France at the lower end of Tuttell
Streete'.**

ASTWELL 28 MARCH 1628

Asks T.S. 'to move my Lord to know whethere he would Honor mee soe much as to be Godfather to my chyld, yf it bee a sonn'. Assures T.S. of his gratitude for past favours and of his desire to have his good opinion.

36074/116

¹ For a genealogy of the Hawley family of Buckland Sororum, Somerset, see S.R.O. DD/SAS (C 1193) 5/1 pp. 189–190. For details of Francis Hawley, later Lord Hawley, see also Burke's *Extinct and Dormant Baronetcies*, 1844, p. 251.

**188. MARY SMITH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
CHESTER 31 MARCH [? 1628]**

Desires to hear from him. 'I ame much after the ould manor and looke now for noe other till I be better. I pray God send me a happy hower when the time comes'. Wishes she was nearer her friends at this time.

AC/C 53/4

189. ELIZABETH SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH 'at Mr Betty the taylor's house without Temple Barre'.

ASHTON 15 MAY 1628

Discusses deals over lands on the estate and asks for his decision on various estate matters. Refers also to business involving 'my sonne Rogers' and 'my brother Phelippes'. Hopes to hear that Parliament will soon come to a happy conclusion and that he will return to Ashton. Asks him to burn this letter because of her doubts about various matters of business.

AC/C 48/6

190. ELIZABETH SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH IN LONDON

ASHTON 9 JUNE 1628

Regrets that the horses reached him in such bad condition and blames it upon 'the naughtyness of bad servants'. Reminds him to procure £100 which she is unable to obtain herself 'for I have a great household and those smale somes of my owne that I have reserved are disbursed for the provisions I am to make for the belly'. They have killed some deer in the park, and she thinks the bucks will be very fat, 'for I never saw more grase'.

'The smalle pox dothe grow hotte as I hire in London. Good swette harte be excedeing carfull what company you come into at private metteings, and take hide of violent exercise this hotte time. I am tould my daughter never looked better than now she doth which makes me hope her phisicke hath done her much good'.

AC/C 48/7

191. ELIZABETH SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH

ASHTON N.D. [? 1628]

Is pleased to hear of his good health in spite of his being in London at 'this hotte tyme'. Hopes that Parliament will soon end and he can return to Ashton. F.R. [Francis Rogers] sends thanks for the help in his business dealings.

AC/C 48/8

192. FRANCES TYRINGHAM TO THOMAS SMYTH

17 JUNE 1628

Thanks him for his kindnesses and for his concern for her son John. Refers to the fact that her son did not go to sea with Captain Penington and to her husband's displeasure. Sends greetings to 'my sister Smith' and to Lord and Lady Poulett.

36074/117a

The back of the above letter was used by T.S. for the following notes of the proceedings in the House of Commons on Saturday 21st June 1628¹

'Sir Walter Earle [Erle]: To have the heades of the Pardon sent down before any pardon came to them.

Sir D. Diggs [Sir Dudley Digges]: That since the same was now gotten so high, and that many businesses being now to bee done, in the Country, and also many things heere which could not bee done till wee have bene informed more fully in the Country, that wee may so send to his Majesty for a recess.

Sir N.R. [Sir Nathaniel Rich]: That hee had a bill to putt into the house, which was concerning the Statute of the E.² India Merchants, that itt would bee of as great advantage to his Majesty as any thing whatsoever. I have itt in my hands, but now tis too late.

It [? But] will therefore fitt itt against next meeting, upon which he desired God's blessinge.

Pim [Pym]: That in regard he heard the King was to goe out of Towne shortly, hee hoped [deleted] desired they might suddenly send to him, to know his answer, for they had many businesses to doe, that would require longer time than now they conceived was likely to come to them.

Corriton [William Coryton]: That itt was necessary the subsidies being now granted, twas fitt the Gentlemen should be in the Country; and for the bills that now remained, twas impossible wee should effect them unlesse wee might have a certain time for sitting and then wee may accordingly proportion our businesse.

Long³: To the same.

Sir E. Cooke [Coke]: I am against sending to the King to know how long wee should sitt, that's against Parliament; but to show the reasons why wee can not performe our businesses in a little space. No King is safe that is not able to defend himselfe and subjects. No King is safe that is not able to defend his confederates. No Prince is able to subsist, unlesse hee be able to reward his well deserved subjects, hence profit, Good will of his subjects. If all the extraordinaries in C [Court], in stable, in Wardrobe, lett them bee reduced to the present orders, and the King will bee [deleted] save infinitely. They have a Council at Yorke, why I doe wonder itt is suffered, for itt does infinite wrong. Now to Wales. Itt draws the subjects rits *ad aliud examen* for itt should bee tried by a jury, now tis by witnesses 6 E. 3 N 4.⁴ The subject tooke into consideration the King's revenues and expences *quinquagensimus* E 3.⁵ The subject tooke itt into consideration to bind the King with in the limits of his owne revenue. In H. 4, H. 8, 6, 7 and E. 4 they did the like.⁶ For forrests, I hope to see

churches and men be were [*sic*] now wild beastes feede. The pensions are not forgiven but retrencht *quousque*. That wee may know his Majesty's pleasure for the time of our sittinge.

M. Flet [Sir Miles Fleetwood]: That if the King will leave their 3 Titles of the C[ourt] of Wardes, of Recusants and Forrests and Exchequer, hee may raise himselfe a revenue of £250,000 or £300,000 a yeare.

Sir T. Went. [Sir Thomas Wentworth]: That these propositions are fitter to bee considered of the next meeting than this. So that a Committee may bee appointed to draw some heades upon which we may advise with our Neighbours, and fitt our selves better against our next meetinge. And that wee can not depart untill wee have settled the businesse of Tonnidge and of Armes.

¹ For a fuller account of the proceedings in the House of Commons and details of the speakers, see M.F. Keeler, M.J. Cole and W.B. Bidwell, (eds.), *Commons Debates 1628*, Yale Center for Parliamentary History, 1978, IV, pp. 401–420.

² Other accounts give *West India*, see M.F. Keeler etc., *op. cit.*, p. 410 note 36 and p. 413.

³ Long is not included as a speaker in any other account. It is not clear whether this is Robert Long, M.P. for Devizes or Walter Long, M.P. for Bath.

⁴ See M.F. Keeler etc., *op. cit.*, p. 405 notes 18 and 19.

⁵ *Ibid.* p. 405 note 20.

⁶ These citations are obviously confused. For another account of this speech see M.F. Keeler, *op. cit.*, pp. 405, 413–414.

193. DOROTHY TYRINGHAM TO THOMAS SMYTH TYRINGHAM 22 JUNE 1628

Thanks T.S. for his courtesy towards her. Hopes to receive a letter from him, and sends her good wishes to himself and his wife.

36174/117b

194. GEORGE HORSEY AND PHILIP POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH¹

‘Fro’ the Mer - mayd in Bread Street’ 14 JULY 1628

Lighthearted request for a buck ‘for our worthy Freind Mr Woodruf to make merry with his good freinds in Bristoll this fayre about the 25th of this moneth of July . . .’.

36074/118

¹ This letter is much decayed and part of the address is illegible.

**195. STEPHEN SMITH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON.
LONDON 18 AUGUST 1628**

Sends news from London:

'Upon Tuesday last the Duke went towards Portsmouth. At his arrival he was entertayned by the Marriners and thought he had satisfied them well by shewing some of them the money he had brought, but the rest it seemes would not take his word to their fellowes for the next day after that he came abroad some insolencie was offered to his coach, but as lucke would have it there was noe hurt done.'¹

My lord Carleton is made Viscount Dorchester, and my lord Montjoy Earle of Newport. There are some Irish honors too confer'd of late, but they are things out of my way and things methinkes which fewe men care for nowe a daies.

Upon Sunday next is the Consecration of your Bath and Wells Bishop, and of 2 or 3 more at Croyden'.

36074/119

¹ The Duke of Buckingham was assassinated in Portsmouth 23 August, 1628.

**196. WILLIAM SEALY, MAYOR OF BRIDGWATER, TO
THOMAS SMYTH AT HINTON ST GEORGE.
BRIDGWATER, 2 SEPTEMBER 1628**

Thanks him for his

'kind and courteous letters . . . wherein . . . you express your great love both to myself in particular and also to our corporation in general with assurances of the continuance thereof while life does last, which I for my part thankfully accept . . . And so I doubt not will the rest of our company when I shall acquaint them with the contents of this your letter, or so much as concerns them. For the buck which your bounty offers, it will be very acceptable unto us, but I cannot set down the certain day when I shall make use thereof. Sir Thomas Wroth¹ (whom your worship would meete with at the eating thereof) being not as yet come into the country, when he is come I shall (God willing) soon after certify your worship of the day when I would expect the buck, and when I would entreat you to meet Sir Tho. here, not only to be partaker with him of the eating thereof, but also of our companies' joint thanks for both your worthy pains taken for this Corporation in the late session of parliament. In the meantime, remembering mine humble service to my Lord Poulett, your noble father-in-law, and my best respect to your worship, I commend the same to the merciful protection of the almighty.

Your worships at command
William Sealy, Mayor'.

36074/120

¹ Sir Thomas Wroth was elected as the other M.P. for Bridgwater *D.N.B.* XXI, pp. 1080–1081. See also Letter 361, footnote 4.

**197. THOMAS ATKINSON TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
ST JOHN'S COLLEGE, OXFORD, 17 SEPTEMBER 1628**

Makes use of Mr Wingham as a messenger, and sends greetings from himself, Tom Bowyer and Jack Edwards. He has been confined to his study with work, and has been summoned to preach at St Paul's Cross on 26 October. Sends news of the following incidents at Oxford:

'There is one Gill, a brother of (?) Dib of Trinity College, that teaches a schoole under his Father att London; one of a strange, haire-brained, bitter disposition, and yett some of his acquaintance make mee believe subject otherwise good enough, who is coming to visitt his friends at Oxon on Munday morning was fortnight amongst a great company in theire seller, besides many unchristianlike railing, indeed unmanlike speeches against the Duke even to the chalking out his individuall place in Hell, burst out att last into these speeches of the King; I am sure they are somewhat neere, I thinke, verbatim: That hee was a very weake man and fitter to stand in a shopp with a white apron before him then to bee a King of England. It is fitt indeed he should be taught another doctrine, but I would not have borne the entry of the Informer, because itt was in such a company of gentlemen, who knew his nature, and vouchsaft him audience only for their mirth's sake. And yett all these are likely to bee summon'd upp. Hee is now in the Gatehouse close Prisoner by his owne fault; for when he came to bee examined and had confessed the words, one of the Privy Counsell told him sure hee was in drinke, or that hee spoke not as he thought, and if hee had done itt rashly, itt was only in such a place where understanding men heard him, and that hee would bee sorry for itt. His answer was that hee was not gladd hee had spoke the words, but hee was then as sober as now, and spoke itt not without deliberation. Upon which he was committed, where Lord have mercy upon him.

But there is a consequence, which doth a little touch mee as for my friend, and I thinke will do you. Your cosen Pickring is in trouble about this, had his study searcht by the Vicechancellor and a Clerke of the Councell, on Saturday night last, comes abroad upon baile (and you know hee is not made to runne away) but yett is confined to Oxford. The occasion is: That when Mr Gill's study was search't there was a letter found of Pickrings to him, which caused this Inquiry.¹ Itt had beene well if that were all; but their is a Fellow from London which doth commonly once in a month write to him, abuses him and all his friends most grossely, and sends the news of the times true enough, but so sawc't with invectives against great men and the Parliament that every letter is a most dangerous Satyre. Hee hath done this above two yeares, but never subscrib'd his name, but they are all written in one most dainty hand; yett

cannot himselfe guesse who this should bee, nor any of his friends conjecture. The last letter which saluted him some month since and was the most invective, ended with "Your most unfortunate Friend, Gerardo."

These letters hee kept by him, to have produced (as hee saies) against this lettermonger whenever hee should have found him; I would hee had burnt them, they would not have said so much against him att the Counsell table whether they are all conveyed.

Sends greetings to all the family at Ashton.

AC/C 44/18

¹ For Alexander Gill and William Pickering of Trinity College and the suspicion of their involvement with 'the late Duke of Buckingham and the unfortunate accident of his death', see *Acts of the Privy Council*, 1628–1629, pp. 134, 143, 159. A poem by Alexander Gill is quoted in *Calendar of State Papers (Domestic)*, 1633–1634, p. 373.

198. HOMPHREY BROWNE¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON

BRISTOL 26 SEPTEMBER 1628

'Right worthy

Sr, Last yeare you gave mee a Cupple of dooe rabbetts which in regard your keep(er) toulde me the yeare was so farr spent to Take them without great prejudice I therefore forbore them; now if yt shall please you to bestow upon me halfe or three quarters of a dooe, I will not only release my rabbetts but allsoe acknowledge yt amongst the rest of your favours, and will strive to deserve yt when soever oportunity shalbe offered, and this with remembrance of my service to my Lady your mother; the two holde knights, your selfe and all your Ladyes I take my leave . . .

Homphrey Browne

36074/121

¹ Humphrey Browne was a Bristol merchant. For his will, dated 27 January 1630, see P. McGrath (ed.), *Merchants and Merchandise in Seventeenth Century Bristol*, *Bristol Record Society*, XIX, 1955, pp. 53–56.

See also William Barrett, *The History and Antiquities of the City of Bristol*, 1789, pp. 483–484. This letter is sealed with the writer's merchant's mark.

**199. FLORENCE SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
HINTON 28 SEPTEMBER 1628**

Apologies for not having written but she was taken ill 'that I

thought I should never have written more', she has since recovered.
'Pray commend my service to al those I o it un to'.

AC/C 60/2

200. THOMAS GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH

'Leave this with Mr Betty a Taylor at his house near the Raigh'd deere without Temple Barre over against Essex House'.

ALL SOULS' COLLEGE, OXFORD, 30 SEPTEMBER [1628]¹

Refers to the appointment of sheriffs and hopes T.S. may be preserved from the office. Refers also to 'Mr Hugh' and to R. Phelips, F. Lutterall, Sir T. Smith and Mr Pigot.²

AC/C 51/2

¹ The correct date of this letter is not clear and may be later than 1628. T.S. used this address in London during 1628 and not apparently thereafter, but Thomas Gorges did not become a Fellow of All Souls until 1629. See Letters 224 and 274. The back of the letter has been used by T.S. for two rough drafts of a letter to an unknown person requesting that he should not be chosen as sheriff during the ensuing year.

² Probably a reference to Hugh Rogers, nephew of T.S. The other persons mentioned are Sir Robert Phelips of Montacute, Francis Luttrell of Dunster, Sir Thomas Smith of Chester and Thomas Piggott of Brockley.

201 .THOMAS ATKINSON TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON LONDON 27 OCTOBER 1628

He preached yesterday at St Paul's Cross, 'but whether with creditt or no, *sub judice lis est*'. Has received news from Ashton by Tom Gorges and refers to Florence Smyth's pregnancy. Sends greetings to her and to Lady Rogers and Sir Francis Rogers from himself and 'my fellow travailers' Mr Harrison, Mr Ballard, Mr Edwards, and Mr Bowyer.

AC/C 44/19

202. ELIZABETH SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT HINTON
N.D. [? 1628]

Writes concerning various unspecified business and estate matters, including an unsuccessful search which she had made for various estate documents, among them 'the patent for Bedminster'.¹

Refers to Samuel and Thomas Gorges, and to Messrs Farwell, Claxton, Martin Elinges, John Cox, Tom Tasker, Baber and Bartholomew Gifford.²

AC/C 48/9

¹ It is not clear what this refers to.

² For Samuel and Thomas Gorges of Wraxall see R. Gorges, *The Story of a Family*, Boston, 1944, pp. 168–9.

For details of William Claxton see Letter 102, note 3; for Martin Elinges see Letter 170, note 1; Farwell, like Claxton, was apparently involved in business affairs on Thomas Smyth's behalf, see B.R.O. 36074/15.

For Bartholomew Gifford see Letter 169, note 1.

The other persons mentioned are estate servants or tenants, see Letter 210 and Appendix II, 426.

203. ELIZABETH SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH IN LONDON
ASHTON 27 JANUARY 1629

Informs him that all at Ashton are in health and hope to see him soon. She has had to lend his former tutor a horse to go to Sodbury 'beinge tould that you left such word that I should furnishe him with a nage when he had ocation'.

Sends news of estate business and tenancies. 'When Cox comes up he shall bringe with him what concerns my sone Rogers businesse'.

AC/C 48/13

204. FLORENCE SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH IN LONDON
['at my Lord Poulet's lodging in Pety France']
ASHTON 27 JANUARY [? 1629]

Hopes soon to see him, and assures him of her constant love and devotion. Sends her service to her father and mother, and mentions also 'Lady Chi', Lady Terringham, cousin Lucy and Rogers. 'I hope you will not stay so long as to send many letters more, this is the 4 I have writ to you sence you went'.

AC/C 60/12

**205. ELIZABETH SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH IN LONDON
ASHTON 1 FEBRUARY [? 1628]**

Is pleased to see him

'so wisely receve the alteration of our longe expected hopes, referinge all to God's will whom I doute not when he see the it beste for us will blesse you with that blessinge to make you joyefull parents to your great comforts and myen'.¹

Sends news of family affairs and desires to know when he requires the horses. Mentions his wife's desire to join him in London.

AC/C 48/11

¹ Florence Smyth had evidently lost the baby she was expecting, see Letter 201.

**206. FLORENCE SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
N.D. [? 1629]¹**

Hopes he is well and that he will come to Hinton where her father has said he may command as many bucks as he pleases. The Earl of Warwick has dined there that day and gone on to Montacute to sleep. 'So I rest yours tel deth, Florence Smyth'.

AC/C60/11

¹ Evidently written from her father's house at Hinton St George.

**207. FLORENCE SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
N.D. [? 1629]¹**

Asks him to send £7 6s. 0d. to pay for some canvas. Entreats him to send a horse 'to fetch the tronk the mony is in, for I am afraid to trust it with a drunken carier'.

'I hop to God you will be so good as your word to be here on Saturday night, assure your selfe that you shall be as to nobody so wellcom as you shal be to your poore wife'.

AC/C 60/13

¹ Evidently written from Hinton St George.

208. FLORENCE SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTHN.D. [? 1629]¹

Writes concerning a young gentlewoman she wishes to employ.

‘. . . the Wentch hath honest and sufficient parents and she is veri wiling to serve me’.

AC/C 60/14

¹ Evidently written from Hinton St George.

**209. THOMAS GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
ST ALBAN HALL, OXFORD¹ 24 FEBRUARY [? 1629]**

‘True it is, a consumption I had uppon mee, its’ a folly to dissemble; and in conscience you hitt right uppon the true nature of it; a disease, I confes, that frequents mee, but this last was a villanous long fitt. I had all the symptomes of death, not likely to live, for God’s tokens were out uppon mee, and had almost brought my head into a vertigo to compasse a remedy, but blessed to be the tyme, in comes Tho. Atkinson and presents mee a cordial from you and my angelicall Lady, . . .’

Assures T.S. of his love & devotion. Mentions also Lady Rogers, Mr Haswell, ‘my lady your mother’ and his cousin Dodington.

AC/C 51/5

¹ Thomas Gorges obtained an M.A. at St Alban Hall 14 April 1627. He became a fellow of All Soul’s in 1629. He later became a prebendary of Salisbury, and was a prominent royalist. Joseph Foster, *Alumni Oxonienses 1600–1714*, Vol. II, 1891, p. 588.

210. ELIZABETH SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH¹

ASHTON 8 APRIL 1629

Has received his letter and, as directed, has sent up three horses by Tasker, and has given him 20 shillings for his charges on the journey. Is glad to hear her daughter-in-law is well and no longer making use of the French doctor’s art. Hopes to see them both soon.

AC/C 48/14

¹ Evidently to T.S. in London, but the address has been torn away.

**211. FLORENCE SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
HINTON ASH WEDNESDAY [? 1629]**

Discusses various household affairs. She has had 'to stand for a godmother for want of a better'.

'I sat up so long at cards last night with my pa., the Barnit¹ and Mr Bluet² that I can scarce se, yet if thou wart in the bed I should kepe my eyes open. I shall looke for thee this day senight according to your promies'.

AC/C 60/16

¹ Possibly Sir William Portman, bart., of Orchard Portman, a near neighbour of the Paultetts, see Visitation of Somerset 1623, *Harleian Society*, XI, 1876, pp. 126-7.

² Possibly John Blewet of Holcombe, Devon, see Visitation of Devonshire 1620, *Harleian Society*, VI, 1872, p. 32.

**212. FLORENCE SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH IN LONDON
ASHTON 14 JUNE [? 1629]**

She has received his two letters and 'the book of nues'. Refers to various household matters and mentions a visit by Sir Baynham¹ and business conducted by Edwards².

'We have kiled a bok that was excelent, I hartili wished thee part of the blodi shoulder a Saterdag and of the pasti isterday, wee le bak the hantch cold in hop thou maiest com home to eat part of it, for sure this firs³ buisnes canot last long, you are so hot of your selves and the wether now so to that you will fier one another if you sit. I pray God give us a blessing yet and to send thee well to do amongst them'.

AC/C 60/15

¹ Sir Baynham Throckmorton of Totworth and Clowerwall in Gloucestershire. See Burke's *Extinct and Dormant Baronetcies*, 1844, pp. 526-527. See also Letter 319.

² John Edwards was bailiff to Thomas Smyth at Ashton.

³ ? fierce.

**213. THOMAS ATKINSON TO THOMAS SMYTH AT
ASHTON**

28 JUNE 1629

'Tom Gorges hath allotted mee but a minutes time to assure you in, that your poore servant is gladd to heare that your selfe and Sir Tho. Smyth have resolved to honour mee with your presence att the Act. Itt beginnes (least you should mistake the time) upon Saturday sevensight the 11th of July; And if itt please Sir Francis, Mr Claxton, Dr Costine, Mr Tucker, Mr Eeling, or any other which will attend you, I welbee ready prest to bidd them welcome. Bee pleased to remember my humblest service to my worthy Lady, my Lady Rogers, my Lady Smyth, your noble Bedfellow. If itt please them to do mee the favour of a visitt I shalbee doubly ingaged if they will acquaint mee with itt before hand, that they may not be unfurnisht of convenient lodgings. I am tied to the post hast of the messenger that brings back the horse to be bold to brake off with

Yours to his uttmmost to serve you
T. Atkinson'.

AC/C 44/20

**214. FLORENCE SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH IN LONDON
WEEK¹ N.D. [? 1629]**

Sends news of the family and hopes to see him safely home soon.

AC/C 60/22

¹ Week was Lord Poulett's house Court de Wick in the parish of Yatton.

215. EDWARD GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH.

N.D. [? 1629]

Sends good wishes and hopes that T.S. will soon have a son. Sends remembrances to 'honest Will Claxton and all my littell coussens'.

AC/C 59/5

216. ELIZABETH SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH

ASHTON 4 AUGUST 1629

Has sent Gofe with the saddles and furniture as desired. Hopes that

Roger has been with him from Cannington to attend his directions for the coach and horses.

The Lord Harbourn and Sir John Beron have been at Ashton and killed a buck for which they are so grateful 'that wee shall comand red deare when ever wee have ocation' and they have invited Thomas to Recland. Sir George Tuey (? or Fuey) has also asked for a buck 'which I have satisfied to stope a rayleing mouth'.¹

'My brother Gorge and Sir Fardinando are at Bathe, to whom I sent desiering to see him at Aishton, but comes not at this tyme meaning to return the end of this week to Langford, but Sir Fardinando his business beinge with the merchands of Bristow I imagine you may finde hire when you come with his nephew Tom to attende him'.²

'I hope you are all with littel and greaty bellys save returned from your joyefull prograse, especially my daughter and your selfe'.

Hopes to see them both soon. She had intended to make a visit to Montacute, but has been put off.

'On Monday your brother Rogers with his mother are both to take her othes before the Judges at Taunton about ther great business'.

Eliza : Smyth

AC/C 48/15

¹ Lord 'Harbourn' is presumably Lord Herbert, i.e. William Herbert Earl of Pembroke, Lord Lieutenant of Somerset. It has not been possible to identify the other two men who are mentioned, nor the location of 'Recland'.

² Sir Ferdinando Gorges and Elizabeth Smyth were married 28 September 1629.

217. PAUL GODWYN¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON KINGWESTON 21 AUGUST 1629

He has sent the best provisions he could get:

'... if paynes, or care, or love, or mony could have gotten better, better should have come'.

Includes note of the costs:

4 Turkyes	4s	
3 dozen of pidgeons	3s	6d
15 Lobsters	7s	
4 Crabbs		12d
1 Mullett		22d
3 Gurnards		9d
8 Partridges	6s	8d
2 Quayles	2s	
11 Rayles	5s	6d

Given to ye Faulconers and the bringers'.

36074/122 b

¹ See Letter 162.

**218. THEODORE NEWTON¹ [? TO THOMAS SMYTH]²
BARSC³ 30 AUGUST 1629**

Writes to give thanks for some unspecified service and to offer his own service for the future.⁴

36074/161

¹ Sir Theodore Newton held extensive lands in Somerset and Gloucestershire, including Barr's Court in the chapelry of Hanham within the parish of Bitton. He died 29 June 1630.

² The address does not survive.

³ Evidently an abbreviation for Barrs Court.

⁴ Endorsed in a later hand: 'Sir Theodore Newton was married at Pilton ye 21 March 1604 to Penolopy daughter of Sir John Rodney'.

**219. THOMAS HORNER TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
CANNINGTON ['with one foot in ye sterope']
3 SEPTEMBER 1629**

Sends his respects and assurances of his regards. Sends also the good wishes of 'your sister Rogers'.

36074/123

**220. STEPHEN SMITH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
LONDON 14 OCTOBER 1629**

Writes concerning some unspecified matter of business, and mentions 'Mr Cockes'.

'Mr Heale tells me that you would faine bargaine for some of the Dukes household stuffe,¹ if I knewe what you principally desired and that any good might be done [in] it I should willingly doe you the best service I could, ether by my selfe or freinds, but I assure you my lady thinks them all to deare'.

*Folger Shakespeare Library
Smyth Letters 8.*

¹ A reference to the sale of the Duke of Buckingham's goods after his assassination in August 1628.

**221. STEPHEN SMITH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
WALLINGFORD HOUSE 6 DECEMBER 1629**

Refers to the departure of his brother, 'for myne owne part I cannot dreame of any other cause of it but his owne convenience, if I could be suspitious of a sinister respect ether in him or you I should certainly tell you of it, but I am confident of better from you both . . .'. Commends the care T.S. has taken 'of Mr Cock's his business'.¹

*Folger Shakespeare Library
Smyth Letters 9.*

¹ The back of this letter has been covered with various illegible scribbles apparently in Thomas Smyth's hand.

**222. FERDINANDO GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH
ASHTON 12 JANUARY 1630**

'I went not to Willes¹ as I intended and therefore forbore to send unto you untell this present, beinge mynded (by godes faffor) to goo tomorrow to Redlinch wher I will staye untell I heyr from you that I may be shour to be abell to geve your mother an account of your welldoinge at my return, if your occasions will not geve you leve to vesete hur your sellfe, for I cann wittnes that hur desyeres is to indever the good of you and youres as when tim serves you will find it by prufe. What you ples to command of me I hope you will not be seremoneuse in requierringe of it,'²

AC/C 49/1

¹ Wells.

² Sir Ferdinando Gorges had married Thomas Smyth's mother, Elizabeth, 28 September 1629. B.R.O. AC/F 1/4.

223. MARY SMITH TO THOMAS SMYTH**CHESTER 20 FEBRUARY (? 1630)**

Is glad to hear from him and hopes he will soon visit them. They are 'to goe to our one [own] house as soone as I am well up again and thare to trie one winter more, before we be unmoveable cittisons of Chester'.

AC/C 53/7

224. THOMAS GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH**ALL SOULS' COLLEGE, OXFORD¹, 14 MARCH 1630**

'By this tyme my letter will allmost fynd you a housekeeper I suppose; yf so Sir, beeware your beefe and cabbage, you know how good I have been at it in my dayes'.

Hopes soon to see a son born to T.S. 'Pray Sir, try once more . . .'. Sends news of feuds among the scholars at Oxford. Hollowell², fellow of Merton has stabbed to death the senior fellow of his college. 'another scholler (Petty) did the lyke to young Champernon, a pretty youth and Tom Grove's nephew, but if he bee not allready dead, is dangerously hurt'. There have been many similar incidents and the Bishop of London³ as Chancellor of the University has been rebuked by the King for allowing such unruly government.

AC/C 51/6

¹ Thomas Gorges became a Fellow of All Souls' College in 1629. Joseph Foster, *Alumni Oxonienses*, Vol. II, p. 588.

² John Holliwell or Helliwell of Yorkshire, Fellow of Merton College 1619–1630. Was found guilty of homicide 'having killed his brother-fellow George Petty in a fit of madness'. Joseph Foster, *op. cit.*, II, p. 733. For George Petty see *Ibid.*, III, p. 1153., and for Philip Champernowne *Ibid.*, I, p. 260.

³ William Laud was Bishop of London and Chancellor of the University.

225. FERDINANDO GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON**LONDON 24 APRIL 1630**

Regrets that T.S. has been troubled by 'a hothedded marenor' without honesty or discretion, and is glad that they will have no more to do with him. Discusses a business transaction with Lady

Wake,¹ and sends also 'the week's publyke newes'.² Assures T.S. of his desire to do him service.

AC/C 49/2

¹ Lady Wake was Elizabeth widow of Baldwin Wake of Clevedon, Somerset, G.E.C. *Complete Baronage*, I, 1900, p. 180.

² This does not survive with the letter.

226. ROBERT GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH

REDLYNCH 16 MAY 1630

Writes that God has blessed them with another daughter, and asks T.S. 'to join with my Lady and my sister Phillips to witnesse hir initiating into the Church'.

AC/C 50/1

227. ELIZABETH GORGES¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH²

N.D. [? 1630]

Refers to his late sad letter concerning the illness of her husband, Sir Ferdinando Gorges, and discusses the best way of getting him home from London. Thanks T.S. for offering his coach for this purpose.

Mentions his sister's illness and the fact that Mr Palmer is treating her.³

AC/C 48/29

¹ Thomas Smyth's mother married Sir Ferdinando Gorges 28 September 1629.

² No address or heading, but evidently written from Cannington.

³ i.e. Thomas Smyth's sister, Helena, who was married to Sir Francis Rogers of Cannington.

228. ELIZABETH GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON

CANNINGTON N.D. [? 1630]

Sends further details of his sister's condition and of the progress of her illness.

'Hire is littel content given for visiteing by the Mr of our house.'¹ Wee see

him 3 tymes a day from his up rising to his going to bed, the drinkeing goes one constantly from morninge to nighte at home and some tymes abroad'.

Hopes to see Thomas the next week. Lord and Lady Poulett have sent to enquire for his sister. Is glad to hear that little Florence is so well amended. Thanks Thomas 'for casteing your eye on my home affaires'.

AC/C 48/22

¹ Presumably a reference to her son-in-law, Sir Francis Rogers.

229. ELIZABETH GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON CANNINGTON ('Sounday morning in my bed')

N.D. [? 1630]

Gives thanks to God for his safe return from Cheshire and sends details of his sister's illness. 'She is now much after the manor as your father was in'. She complains of general weakness, and of pains and swelling in her thighs, knees, ankles and feet, and also of extreme pain in her stomach. 'I shalbe joyed to see you to morow, that have had little sence I laste saw you'.

AC/C 48/21

230. MARY SMITH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON LONDON 14 JUNE [?1630]

They intend to stay in London only a fortnight more, and hope then to see him in Chester. 'Our lodging is in the Strand at the sine of the princes armes at one Mr South's house, a cutler near Denmarke House'.

AC/C 53/8

231. THOMAS SMITH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON. CHESTER 27 JUNE 1630

Thanks T.S. for sending Tom Footman with the unwelcome news that he has postponed his visit to Chester. Hopes nonetheless to be able to entertain him soon.

AC/C 54/3

232. THOMAS SMITH TO THOMAS SMYTH.

CHESTER, 24 AUGUST 1630

Urges T.S. to visit them at Chester and assures him of the regard and affection in which he is held by the writer and by his wife.

AC/C 54/4

**233. ELIZABETH GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH AT
CHESTER**

BRISTOL 10 SEPTEMBER 1630

Hopes he has arrived safely at Chester. Her brother and sister have left for Wells. Her brother has not been in health for a long time and has taken 'of the watter with him in bottells'.

Has little news except the deaths of Lady Ros at Barrs Court¹ who has left her husband £400 a year inheritance, 'and baronet Hell² hath also buried his lady, she was delivered of a sonne that lives which will be something out of her sisters waye, whom it is sayd was newly marrid to Haris a litell before this happened'.

She has met George Tailour who says that all at Hinton are well. Sends Mr Gorges affection 'and your sister's'.

AC/C 48/16

¹ The reference to Lady Ros is not clear. The owner of Barrs Court was Sir Theodore Newton who had married Penelope daughter of Sir John Rodney of Rodney Stoke, Visitation of Gloucestershire 1623, *Harleian Society*, XXI, 1885, p. 115; Burkes Extinct and Dormant Baronetcies, 1844, pp. 384–385.

² Sir Thomas Hele, baronet of Fleet in Holberton, Devon. His first wife, Penelope, daughter and co-heir of Emorbe Johnson of Wigborough, Somerset died in 1630, leaving a son.

M.F. Keeler, *The Long Parliament 1640–1641*, 1954, p. 210.

234. H ———¹ GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH

ELVERTON 18 SEPTEMBER 1630

Sends good wishes and assures T.S. at length of affection and desire to be of service to him.

AC/C 59/4

¹ Possibly Henry Gorges (1581–1649) eldest son of Robert Gorges of Batcombe, Somerset, see R. Gorges, *The Story of a Family*, Boston, 1944, pp. 180–182. See also Letter 239.

235. FERDINANDO GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH

LONDON 29 SEPTEMBER 1630

'I thanke you for your care to stope Mr Write¹ in his cores, of whom you will her more by my nevey William who is to bringe down an atachment for the shipe and goodes with other orderes suche as the Lawe will warrant, for if our prosses hould as that her semes to be made, she will prove as good pryces as if she hade bin in the possession of the Spanerdes.² The venesen besnes is at an end, and we to secke a new imployment for our shipe, which will hould me here longer than I intended, it is sayed the pesse with Spayn is concluded, and that if it be soe, that then shipes of hur borden will want no frayte, and soun will saye the Spaneshe Kinge will hope to forneshe his occasions for shipes and men from henes by the faffor of the K(ing) and state, how that will pruve time will show, but it is conceived that ther new conclusion of pesse will mouche chainge the afares of the Cristen Warrell, what will folow time will show, and soe I end for the present that will ever be to you, in a father and trew friend'.

AC/C 49/3

¹ Mr Wright, Clerk of the House of Commons, see *Calendar of State Papers (Domestic)*, 1630–1631, p. 21.

² For a further reference to the Venetian ship and to the involvement of Sir Ferdinando and his nephew William Gorges in the business see Letter 236.

236. ELIZABETH GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH

BRISTOL 5 OCTOBER 1630

She has sent the things that came from Betty. Will. Gorge has arrived from London with a commission to search the ship and to serve a writ which was executed by Mr Ham. 'He hath put 2 men in and wee other tow for it is thought ther is beaver in her which he hath not entered into the coustome house.'

Asks for his directions concerning the skinner and the warrener. The Keeper's man has gone and he has taken in his place Robin Satchfeld to help the warrener. She has been earnestly entreated for a doe and has almost promised it, 'therfore to save my credite I must now be a begger to you for thè performance'.

Sends the four lemons she has received from Mrs Popley to her daughter, 'I longe to here whou she and her great bely doe'.

Sends remembrances from his sister.

AC/C 48/17

237. THOMAS TYRINGHAM¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON

? WINSHAM PARK, 8 DECEMBER 1630

Sends his good wishes and was sorry not to have seen T.S. in the New Forest. Remembers his humble service to Lord Poulett.

36074/124a

¹ Sir Thomas Tyringham of Tyringham in Buckinghamshire had married Frances Gorges, Thomas Smyth's aunt, see Letter 118.

238. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON.

N.D. [? 1630]¹

'I was glad to understand by your letter that you came well to Ashton through those foule wayes and tempestuous weather which continues still and with great violence such as may make us perceave that God is angry with us, this part of ye country was never more drowned in this latter age, and all ye lowe roomes in my house are upp to ye knees in water'.

Refers to the presentations to the parsonages of Walton and Brockley and to an application for these livings which he has received from Mr Smart. 'I did intend the Parsonage of Walton to one whom I think meritts a better, and so I shall doe still unless you have a mind to dispose it.' Mentions negotiations over land at Clevedon with 'Mr Strowd of Barrington' and 'my Lady Wak'. 'Commend my service I pray to my lady your mother, and to my lady Rogers and to ye Knight, and God keepe you and me'.

AC/C 61/12

¹ Thomas Smart, referred to in the letter, became incumbent of Walton in 1630; in the same year Samuel Stringer became incumbent of Brockley. F.W. Weaver, *Somerset Incumbents*, 1889, pp. 245, 298.

**239. H —¹ GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
8 JANUARY [? 1631]**

Sends assurances of his goodwill and service, and good wishes for the New Year.

AC/C 59/1

¹ Name illegible, but possibly Henry Gorges, see Letter 234.

**240. THOMAS TYRINGHAM TO THOMAS SMYTH AT
HINTON
LONDON 10 FEBRUARY 1631**

Refers to the sale of his trees and timber and asks T.S. to intreat Lord Poulett to help in furthering the sale.

36074/124 b

**241. THOMAS TYRINGHAM TO THOMAS SMYTH
N.D. ? 1631**

Refers to business involving Mr Warr¹ and Sir George Horsey² and to a debt he owes. Asks T.S. for help.

36074/124 c

¹ Francis Warre of Hestercombe, Somerset, see Burke's *Extinct and Dormant Baronetcies*, 1844, p. 553.

² Sir George Horsey of Clifton Maybank, Dorset, see Visitation of Dorset 1623, *Harleian Society*, XX, 1869, p. 41, Collinson, *op. cit.*, III, p. 85.

**242. MARY SMITH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
20 MARCH [? 1631]**

'Deare Brother, I know not what I may be, I am yet so weary of London that I have xx times wisht me at Chester in the ruens of Troy, and I pray blame me not for it, for I have bin scant out of doors sence I came in, and for the most part the Doctor makes me keep my bed and lie on it all day, and take a purging diet drincke with aplications to my scurve foot which hath put me to all this trouble'.

Her husband has been looking for a house, and they have finally taken one in Drury Lane. The houses in Covent Garden are too small for their large company, except the largest which are only to be had for £4 or £5 per week rent. She has had her two boys brought down from Chester, and intends to send Lawrence to Oxford before Easter.

Note added by her husband, Thomas Smith, to inform T.S. of the house they have taken.

AC/C 53/9

**243. DRAFT LETTER BY THOMAS SMYTH, INTENDED
RECIPIENT UNKNOWN.**

26 MARCH 1631

Refers to the settlement of the estate of his brother-in-law Sir Francis Rogers.¹

36074/147

¹ Sir Francis Rogers of Cannington, Somerset had married Thomas Smyth's sister, Helen. He died 22 August 1638.

**244. MARY SMITH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON.
CHESTER 11 SEPTEMBER [? 1631]**

She has returned safe and well from London, though the house is as unsatisfactory as ever. She has no remedy but patience.

'We talke of many things, some times of bilding in the cuntry, then in the towne, another while going to London, but when any of these are put in execution, then for my part I will beleeeve it'.

She has been at Chomley since returning from London, and has met Lord and Lady Strainge.¹

AC/C 53/10

¹ James Stanley, son and heir of the Earl of Derby, was styled Lord Strange, Burke's *Complete Peerage* XII, Pt. I, 1953, p. 337.

245. FLORENCE SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH IN LONDON
['at the sine of the Blew Anchor without Temple Barre']

WEEK 13 OCTOBER 1631

Is glad to have received a letter from him and to hear of his well-being.

'I will use thy one words, I need not tel thee how I long to have thy copany againe. . . . I was at home on Tuesday last and found the folks turning of the old mow which was almost halfe eten out with mise, I never saw a mow so spoyld. Our dish is found though my cosen Hues went to the divell for it. She sent to a woman at Bristol before I knew it, which hath mutch troubelled me for of all things I hated wichcraft, but I have prayed God not to lay the sin to my charg, nor I hope he will for I was inosent of it. The mater was that Loker had the dish and denied him, he was all most mad about it, but the mater is not veri well I think of Loker's seyde, for he had lokt up the dish in his box. I have sayd nothing to him, I leve it tel you com home, but I have given your gardener warning to be gon unles I find maters in beter order when I com home againe, for the garden was like a wilderness. I think it ware your best corse to get a good gardener whare you are, for I cannot abide this sotish felo, I fere God is offended with us for kepeing sutch sotish felos as wee have. Sorri thus to troubel you with no more wrathsom maters, I preethe have a kare of thy selfe and I beseech God to bles thee and send thee safe and well home to thy best love,

Florance Smyth'

AC/C 60/3

246. SIR THOMAS GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH.

N.D. [? 1631]

'My wife hath sent your Lady a cake of her own making which I am bound to commend before Woodstreet, Oxford or Banbery, though they have more plums yet ours is the best bread. If any person be inquisitive to aske how my old Dame gott the skill of making of cakes, you may resolve them that one Sir Richard Baker was her Godfather'.

Assures T.S. of his service and affection.

AC/C 59/3

247. SIR ROBERT PHELIPS TO THOMAS SMYTH

N.D. [? 1631]¹

Refers to unspecified business with Mr Codrington and to the proposed marriage of the writer's son with the daughter of Sir Robert Pye.²

36074/142 a

¹ The marriage of the writer's son, Edward Phelips, to Sir Robert Pye's daughter, Anne, took place in February 1632.

² Sir Robert Pye was a man of great wealth, Auditor of the Exchequer, and it was the dowry that his daughter Anne brought to the Phelips family that recouped their much impoverished fortunes. T.G. Barnes, *Somerset 1625-1640*, 1961, p. 26. See also Letter 248 note 4.

248. ELIZABETH PHELIPS¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH.

N.D. [1632]²

Writes concerning her projected marriage to J.C.³ which has been broken off, apparently over the matter of the marriage portion.

'I will tell you my resolution is never to marrie him unlesse hee can give so full satisfaction unto my father that it procure him to command me, for I protest my love was never soe greate that I care for marring of him, but that my father and mother weare ever willing to have a match with him, and he was ever held a very honest faire conditioned gentleman; these were the maine reasons that induced me to affect him, and not my owne fancy or desier of a husband. I must tell you my father is much troubled at this these slight and ill usage of him and vowes I shall marrie a better man farr than J.C. though it cost him tribble the portion, for hee will not be fooled by no precice matron or bussie balde patted knave, you know I am sure that I mean Mother Caple and frier Claxton, for the truth is the first exceptions as farre as we can yett learn came from Claxton'.³

Sends news that her brother is shortly to be married to Sir Robert Pye's daughter.⁴

AC/C 56/1

¹ Elizabeth Phelips was the daughter of Sir Robert Phelips of Montacute and his wife Bridget who was the sister of Thomas Smyth's mother Elizabeth. She was born in 1610 and was therefore 21 at the time of writing this letter.

² The letter is undated but the marriage between the writer's brother, Edward Phelips, and Sir Robert Pye's daughter which is referred to in the letter took place in February 1632.

³ The identify of 'J.C.' is not clear, but from the later reference to 'Mother Caple' he may have been a member of the Caple or Capell family of Swainswick near Bath.

⁴ The writer's father, Sir Robert Phelps, was heavily in debt, and in 1631/2 he recouped the family fortunes by a marriage settlement whereby he made over most of his estate to his heir, Edward Phelps and to the latter's wife Anne, daughter of Sir Robert Pye, Auditor of the Exchequer (P.R.O. C 142/517/157). It was this marriage settlement for her brother which deprived the writer of her marriage portion: T.G. Barnes, *Somerset 1625-40*, 1961, p. 26.

249. SIR ROBERT GORGES¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON.

REDLYNCH, 2 JANUARY 1632

My youth desiring my leave to waite on you this Christmas (though to your trouble) I could not denie him for that I assure my selfe in your companie we shall rest secure of him'.

Regrets he is unable to visit T.S. himself.

AC/C 50/2

¹ Sir Robert Gorges of Redlynch, Somerset, was the second son of Sir Thomas Gorges of Langford, Wiltshire, and his wife Hellena, Marchioness of Northampton. Sir Robert's eldest son, Thomas, would have been 19 years of age in 1632.

250. ELIZABETH PHELIPS TO THOMAS SMYTH.

LONDON, 16 FEBRUARY [1632]

The business with J.C. has proceeded no further.¹ Her brother is to be married on Monday next 'and will send you a bride poynt shortly'.

AC/C 57/4

¹ See Letter 248.

251. ELIZABETH PHELIPS TO THOMAS SMYTH.

LONDON 3 MARCH — [1632]

Informs him that she has received a letter from J.C. which was 'a final discharge as I concieve for he sayes he will continu to wish me all happynes and a farr fairer fortune than his owne'.¹

Informs T.S. that by the arrangements for her brother's marriage to a daughter of Sir Robert Pye, Sir Robert 'payes all my father's debts

and settis his land free soe that my father settles twelve hundred pound a yeare on my brother and charges him with neither debt nor portion for any of us² but leaves it free to him selfe . . .¹

Hopes that 'God hath made you father of a son which I am sure will be noe small joy to you . . .'³

AC/C 57/3

¹ See Letter 248.

² i.e. herself and her sister, both of whom were deprived of marriage portions by the settlement.

³ Thomas Smyth's only son, Hugh, was born 21 April 1632.

**252. GEORGE ROGERS¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
CANNINGTON 27 MARCH 1632**

Refers briefly to some unspecified business relating to an unnamed third party.

AC/C 55/1

¹ George Rogers was the younger brother of Sir Francis Rogers of Cannington who had married Thomas Smyth's sister, Helena, see M.J. Hawkins (ed.), *Sales of Wards in Somerset 1603–1641*, *Somerset Record Society*, LXVII, 1965, p. 146.

**253. MARY SMITH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
CHESTER 17 APRIL [? 1632]**

She was safely delivered of a daughter on the Monday after Lady Day.¹ Her husband's affairs continue uncertain, 'we are constant to inconstancy, but indeede I know noe more than you do what his intentions are, more than to let tomorrow care for it selfe'.

Refers to Sir Randle and Lady Manwaring² who are to visit Bath and asks T.S. 'for my sake to take sum notis of them'.

AC/C 53/11

¹ Thomas Smyth's sister Mary had married Sir Thomas Smith of Hough, Cheshire, and produced 8 sons and 14 daughters. She died in 1665 aged 67, S.R.O. DD/SAS (C 1193) 5/1, p. 60.

² Note added in a later hand, 'Sir Randle Manwaring Kt. married Jane daughter of Sir Tho. Smith of Hough.

Ann Manwaring, his sister, was married to Lawrence, son and heir of Sir Tho. Smith

of Hough 1591. For further details see Cheshire Visitation Pedigrees, *Harleian Society*, XCIII, 1941, p. 74.

**254. HELLENA MARCHIONESS OF NORTHAMPTON TO
THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON**

REDLYNCH 31 MAY 1632

Is glad to hear of his health and that of her daughter and their children. Since he is going to Cheshire, desires him to remember her kind love to her son and daughter there and to their children. With commendations and prayers for his safety on the journey to Cheshire, 'Your very loving grandmother, H.N.'

AC/C 52/1

255. ELIZABETH GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH.

LONDON 4 JUNE 1632

Hugh has recovered his health,

'wee cannot saye it was the smale poxe he had, but some gives it a new name and cales it the broad mesels, it goes away without any other shewe but like heate pimpels. I hope the other tow chulderen will not have it'.

Her brother Gorges informs her that her cousin Tom is very ill at Langford with the small pox.

'Good swett Tom let me intreat you to have a great care of your owne health now you travale, and your diett, although I know you are as temperat as any can be'.

Thanks him for the pains he has taken and especially for his letter to Mr Gorges. Complains that 'C'¹ is very hasty in employing Aishford to survey any tenements in hand without orders.

'Mr Gorge and I are resolved to take no more tenants but such as shall seeme beste in your judgment, for such as shall be held fittest in your esteeme shalbe harkened unto and no other.'

Complains of difficulties with tenants, including Hodges at Elmington and farmer Canter. Wishes her daughter 'as happy a journey as she will make it comfortable to the great belyd woman she goes to . . . '.

AC/C 48/18

¹ Possibly William Claxton of Bedminster. See Letter 102, note 4.

**256. FLORENCE SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
20 AUGUST 1632¹**

Her father is hunting on Exmoor and she hopes to return to Ashton as soon as he comes back. Hopes that T.S. will visit Hinton, since her father may

‘ . . . take it unkindly if you will not find som spare time to spend heare with him . . . I pray think of that that may be most convenient to thy selfe and I am thine to dispose of and I shall never think my selfe badly imployed whare in I may plesse thee and so God almiti bles thee and my litel boy . . . ’.

AC/C 60/5

¹ Evidently written from Hinton St George.

**257. FLORENCE SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
HINTON 26 AUGUST 1632**

Asks him to send the coach horses for her so that ‘since thou canst not kom to me I will kom to thee’.

Sends news of his father and the French visitors he has been entertaining including ‘Mounseer Sobesa’.¹

AC/C 60/4

¹ M. Benjamin de Rohan, Duc de Soubise the French Huguenot leader who had fled to England and who had been entrusted to the care of Lord Poulett, see C.G. Winn, *The Pouletts of Hinton St George*, 1976, p. 49.

**258. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
HINTON 2 NOVEMBER — [1632]¹**

Writes to enquire after their health and well-being at Ashton, ‘it being the greatest want I find heare that you are so farre off and that I cannot heare from you as often as when I was at Week’. Refers to his son-in-law, Rolles, who ‘hathe gotten his olde coughe agayne and is not well with it’. Mentions also ‘your uncle Sir R. Philips’, Sir John Stawell² and the death of Sir Hugh Portman.

AC/C 61/24

¹ Sir Hugh Portman, whose death is referred to in the letter, died in 1632. Somerset Archaeological & Natural History Society, *Proceedings*, 89, 1943, p. 50.

² See Letter 352 note 1.

259. MARY SMITH TO THOMAS SMYTH.

CHESTER, 19 APRIL [? 1633]

Sends this letter by his cousin Breerwood.

'Your brother Smith¹ is at this time as bissy as may be plucking downe part of his oulde house and setting up new in its place, it is not without great neede, that which he now dos, for it was not to be lived in as it was'.

AC/C 53/12

¹ This refers to Sir Thomas Smith of Chester, brother-in-law of Thomas Smyth. Both men were apparently engaged on major building work during 1633, see Appendix II.

The Breerwood family of Chester were related to the Smiths by marriage, see *Lancashire and Cheshire Record Society*, 58, 1913, pp. 39–40.

**260. EARL OF NORTHAMPTON, MASTER OF HIS
MAJESTY'S LEASH, TO ALEXANDER POPHAM,
THOMAS SMYTH AND WILLIAM BASSET.**

14 MAY 1633

Deputation to them for one year to take in his Majesty's name within Somerset and Gloucestershire, within the franchises and liberties as without, as many greyhounds, both dogs and bitches, as they shall think meet for his Majesty's disport and recreation; and to seize and take away all greyhounds, beagles or whippets as may be offensive to his Majesty's game and disport.

AC/F 6/7

261. MARY SMITH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON

CHESTER 17 JULY [? 1633]

Is alarmed to hear of her sister's dangerous sickness and anxious for news of her. Proposes to visit them in three weeks time by which

time T.S. will have returned from the Assizes in Devonshire.

AC/C 53/14

263. MARY SMITH TO THOMAS SMYTH.

CHESTER 8 AUGUST [? 1633]¹

She has given birth to 'another wench'. Sends love and her prayers for T.S., his wife and Hugh.

AC/C 53/5

¹ This letter must be later than 1632 because of the reference to Hugh, the son of Thomas Smyth who was born 1 April 1632; it can hardly be dated 1632 since Mary Smith had a baby in April of that year, see Letter 253.

264. PHILIP POULETT¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH

WEXFORD 8 SEPTEMBER 1633.

Has received a letter from T.S. via Thomas Croker.

'The greatest newse here with us is of the safe arrival of our new Lord Deputy², whose carriage and demeanure stricks an astonishment amongst the Irish, for he refuseth and rejecteth their gifts and presents, which is a rare example in this kingdome'.

If he continues as he has begun 'he will make this land and nation happy'. Hopes to see T.S. soon, and would like to get a stallion from Lord Poulett and a mare from T.S. to set himself up as a horse breeder.

36074/125

¹ Philip Poulett was a younger brother of John 1st Baron Poulett, and the uncle of Thomas Smyth's wife Florence.

² Thomas Wentworth Earl of Strafford who arrived in Dublin as Lord Deputy in July 1633.

265. THOMAS SMYTH TO LORD GORGES AT LANGFORD¹

ASHTON 4 FEBRUARY 1634

'My Lorde, Haveing since the receipt of your letter called my owne into my memory, I can not finde wherein I gave you ground to believe the

want of imployment for my painter or furniture for my house induced mee to supply those defects by obtayning the Lone of the picture I writt for². So that from the very beginninge of your discourse, I discover more smoke than fire, and fynde you disposed to a Quarrell though you bringe it about by the heade and shoulders. For had not I made the request unto one possessed with praejudice, I see not but unto a reasonable man, such as I have hereunto reputed you, it was sufficient argument I could not but really honour the substance that would send so farre to obtayne a sight of its shadowe. And heere I can not but tell you that though you might have beene so observant unto those of your sister's as to have afforded fayrer satisfaction. . . . I have called my selfe to a strict accompt, and fynde the verdict to bee that in nothinge I have ever yet shewed want of Love unto your father or due respect unto your selfe. But on your parte, twill appeare, even if your own Conscience, bee asked that seven years are almost past since my father's death; in all which tyme you never tooke notice by any particular address unto this place, that hee had hever left or wife or sonne beynde him. But God and him bee thanked wee were left as farre from intention as necessity to begg your countenance, only wee should have beene gladd to have maintayned freindly exchanges, had you not first began the neglect. In a worde, I hope the Picture is not only extant at Langford. If all England afforde it I wyll bee Master of a Copy. For I professe it my honour to bee Sir Thomas Gorges gransonne, as it is my happynesse to be the chylde of those parents hee held worthy of his choycest affection. But as the case stands, I esteeme it little addition, and am farre from taking any pride in that therewithall I am made subject to undergoe the title of

Your Nephewe
Tho. Smyth

Ashton Feb. 4th 1633 [1634]³

AC/C 59/6

¹ Edward Lord Gorges, brother of Sir Hugh Smyth's wife Elizabeth and uncle of T.S.

² Evidently T.S. had asked to borrow a painting of his grandfather Sir Thomas Gorges in order to have it copied, and the request had been refused.

³ This is possibly a draft or copy, but it is very well written, signed and dated, so perhaps wiser counsels prevailed and the letter was never sent.

266. FERDINANDO GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON

LONDON 15 MARCH 1634

He has received a letter from Mr Morow¹, one of the gentlemen of the King's bedchamber, asking for his assistance in a commission for the King's service in Bristol, in which T.S. is also named. Regrets that his business will keep him away from Bristol, but asks T.S. to

afford all the assistance he can 'for he is a Nobell gentelman, and wilbe redey to requite it . . .'. Will send down the spring for the wooden frames 'as faste as they cann be made',² Sends commendations to T.S. and his wife.

¹ Mr Morrow is evidently meant for William Murray, groom of the bedchamber, see *Calendar of State Papers (Domestic)* 1633–34, p. 230. For references to his grant of concealed prizes, see *Calendar of State Papers (Domestic)*, 1634–35, pp. 34, 35, 91, 95.

² Presumably a reference to equipment required in connection with the building work which T.S. was undertaking at Ashton Court.

**267. HELLENA MARCHIONESS OF NORTHAMPTON TO
THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
REDLYNCH 8 SEPTEMBER 1634**

Hopes that T.S. and her daughter are well and 'my little Hugh'.
Asks for a buck to be sent to her at Redlynch.

AC/C 52/2

¹ Hugh Smyth, the only son of T.S., was born 21 April 1632.

**268. MARY SMITH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
CHESTER 14 JANUARY 1635**

Sends this letter by her old acquaintaince Mr Fearry.

'I thanke God we are all well but for cofes and coldes, only my youngest is at this time very sicke, what aileth it I know not. We kept our Crismas at Chomley amongst the nobility, whear was Mr Hugh Calvely, My Lords Chomley's neve, and his Lady the Earl of Huntingdon's daughter, and the Lord Harbards son with his Lady, the Earles of Bridgwater's daughter, and amongst the rest Sir Antonie Saintions . . .'.¹

Note subscribed by her husband, Thomas Smith, sending good wishes to T.S. for a happy New Year.

AC/C 53/15

¹ Sir Robert de Cholmondeley of Cholmondeley, created baronet 1611, viscount 1628, see Cheshire Pedigrees, *Lancashire and Cheshire Record Society*, 58, 1913, p. 62.

For Hugh Calvey see *ibid.* p. 56. Richard Herbert, Baron Herbert of Chirbury, had

married Mary daughter of the 1st Earl of Bridgwater, Burke's *Complete Peerage*, 1926, VI, p. 442. The last person mentioned is presumably Sir Anthony St John.

269. ANNE TYNTE¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
[MARCH] 1635

Refers to some unspecified business regarding her son, John, and to a message she has had from Mr Gifford. Mentions also Cary, Durent and Weekes.

Draft reply from T.S. enclosed.

Is at a loss how to advise her in her business and can only recommend her to place her son under God's protection.

Ashton 4 March 1635

36074/126 a

¹ Anne Tynte was the widow of Sir Thomas Tynte of Chelvey who died 16 September 1629 possessed of extensive lands in Somerset, leaving as his heir his son John aged 11. In February 1630 the wardship of the heir was obtained from the Crown by a 'committee' consisting of Anne Tynte, Thomas Smyth and Richard Morgan. See M.J. Hawkins (ed.), *Sales of Wards in Somerset 1603-1641*, *Somerset Record Society*, LXVII, 1965, pp. 73-75.

270. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
['from aboard my Reformable in the Sound at Plymouth']
22 JUNE [1635]¹

'Sonne Smith,

After a monthe being at sea, the fleete is now come to anchor in the Sound at Plimouth, nor with any purpose to stay longer than the wynds and weather will give us leave to goe off to sea agayne'.

Writes of the bad weather they have had and of the fact that one of the ship's boats overturned and all in her were drowned.

'We have beene nere the French fleete and the Dutch fleete sinc we came out but mett none of the men of warre who have all lefte the narrowe seas and all gone to the west'.

The Admiral has been told that there are nearly 52 sail of ships lying near the Lizard, 'wheather wee are goinge as faste as the wind will blowe us . . . '.

Sends his blessing to T.S. and to Florence and their children Hugh

and Florence; also to Elizabeth Gorge and Sir Ferdinando, 'whose company I wish we had sometymes in the Counsell of Warre, knowinge him to be an able man as fitt to doe service in thease employments in Old England as in the Newe'.

AC/C 61/P²

¹ For a few months during 1634-35 Lord Poulett took command of the King's ship 'The Constant Reformation', a ship of 742 tons carrying 250 men and 40 guns, in a fleet commanded by the Earl of Lindsay, to protect English commerce from the Dutch and French. C.G. Winn, *The Pouletts of Hinton St George*, 1976, p. 52. See also *D.N.B.* XVI, pp. 229-230.

² This and other letters of John 1st Lord Poulett were transcribed by L.V. Way during the early 20th century; the transcript is now in Bristol Reference Library B28176.

271. ELIZABETH GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH AT HINTON ASHTON PHILIPS¹ 12 JULY 1635

Is glad to hear that Thomas and his wife and 'littel Hugh' have arrived safely at Hinton. Has sent three horses 'the souner to bringe you home'.

'Little Florance² was with me this afeternone, and is very well, she hath a tooth broken the flesh which made her some thinge ile and out of quiete before it came out. I belive she will have more very shortly'.

Hopes to see them soon. Sends love and respects from Francis Rogers and his wife.

AC/C 48/19

¹ After her marriage to Sir Ferdinando Gorges, Elizabeth and Sir Ferdinando lived a good deal at Ashton Philips or Lower Court in Long Ashton, only a mile distant from Ashton Court.

² Florence was the eldest of Thomas Smyth's four daughters.

272. ELIZABETH GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH¹

N.D. [? 1635]

' . . . I must now thank you for your love and care of the old man.² Saturday last his New England people set sail. God speed them well, for I have little hope of any good . . .'³

¹ This fragment of a letter is quoted by R. Gorges *The Story of a Family*, Boston, 1944, pp. 132–133. The letter does not survive amongst those in the Bristol Record Office.

² A reference to her husband, Sir Ferdinando Gorges.

³ For further details of Sir Ferdinando's involvement in projects for the colonisation of New England see C.M. McInnes, *Ferdinando Gorges and New England*, Bristol Branch of the Historical Association, 1965.

**273. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON, ON
BOARD *THE CONSTANT REFORMATION*, PLYMOUTH
20 JULY [1635]**

The fleet has been driven into Plymouth by strong winds and high seas, a week sooner than they had intended. The Admiral's ship has cracked its foremast which will take three or four days to repair.

'I think the French fleete and our's will not meete unless the windes bring us together agaynst their will, yet we learn by a bark wee sent into thare coste that they are 30 saile of French and 10 of Dutch together and that seaven great shippes more are making redy at Brest, so that it is well for us that wee have spent our victualls and are now standing back to the downes either to receave more or to be turned to grasse. But I heare from London that there are more victualls provided and more shippes but the Amirall hath no certayn advertisement of eather.

I imagine if the winde serve the fleete will be at Portsmouth about the end of this month and from thence plie to the east. I wish I had some of those mek tenants of Yeaton aboard the fleete¹, another yeare they will be fitt for us, in the mean tyme I shall be glad to hear they were more tractable though I conceive little hope by your letter of their amendment Tom: it is a great contentment to me that Mr Poulett's care in my affares is accompanied with your helpe by which you oblige me the more though i am yours as surely as may be.

God of heaven bless you and Florence and all yours, so I remayn

Your true affectionate father

J. Poulett.

Plymouth 20th July

If a myssenger weare with you from us, I suppose you would ask how wee did in the rough weather. I assure you wee endured the first storm very well only Jack² was grasy stomakt but this last wee endured without a qualme'.

'AC/C 61/2

¹ A reference to his tenants at Yatton.

² A reference to his eldest son, John.

274. THOMAS GORGES¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH

ALL SOULS' COLLEGE, OXFORD 4 JANUARY [1636]

The Queen has been brought to bed², and the Court of Wards has been delivered of an attorney. Sir Walter Pye is dead and it is thought that Mr Herbert will take his place. The Recorder of London 'hath likewise play'd his last tune, and Mr Calthrop of the Middle Temple sings in his roome'.³ The Palsgrave has been royally feasted this Christmas by the Archbishop and the Lord Keeper.⁴ Lord Cottington expected to be made Treasurer as a New Year's gift but it has not yet been conferred.⁵

Sends wishes for a long life and a merry New Year.

AC/C 51/3

¹ Thomas Gorges was a member of the Gorges family of Somerset, he matriculated at Queen's College 1622, became a fellow of All Souls in 1629. Later he was a prebendary of Salisbury and a prominent royalist. Joseph Foster, *Alumni Oxonienses, 1500-1714*, II, 1891, p. 588.

² The Queen gave birth to a daughter, Elizabeth, in December 1635, Elizabeth Hamilton, *Henrietta Maria*, 1976, p. 134.

³ Sir Walter Pye, attorney of the Court of Wards, died December 1635 and was succeeded by Sir Henry Calthorpe who had become Recorder of London only a few weeks earlier. *D.N.B.* VIII, pp. 260-262; XLVII, pp. 71-72; *Calendar of State Papers (Domestic)*, 1635-36, p. 179.

⁴ Charles Lewis, Elector Palatine visited England December 1635 - January 1636, *Calendar of State Papers (Domestic)* 1635-6, pp. 141-2, 148. For references to his entertainment by the Archbishop see *Calendar of State Papers (Domestic)* 1635-6, p. 266.

⁵ The Treasury became vacant upon the death of Sir Richard Weston, Earl of Portland in 1635, thereafter it was put into commission with both Lord Cottington and Archbishop Laud among the commissioners. M.J. Havran, *Caroline Courtier, the Life of Lord Cottington*, 1973; *D.N.B.* XII, pp. 293-296.

**275. SIR ROBERT GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH AT HINTON
REDLYNCH 14 JANUARY 1636**

Is concerned lest his son should have outstayed his welcome at Hinton, but excuses him because of the friendliness with which he was received by Lord and Lady Poulett and the rest of the company. Discusses the sale to Thomas of 'my long board carpett and the great foote carpett' for which he asks £55; the two 'guilt Basons and yeowers' he can have either for himself or for Lady Rogers at the goldsmith's valuation; and the bed 'with the whole furniture and the imbroidered cushions' he can have for £100.

AC/C 50/3

**276. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
BICTON 23 JANUARY 1636**

Is pleased to know that Florence has been safely delivered of a daughter and sends good wishes to them all. He himself is much better, 'the paynes of the gowte have left mee and the voyalence of my feaver is alayed'. Does not write in his own hand because his eyes are so weak. Mentions Sir Edward Rodney and Mr Jarrett in connection with some unspecified business deal.

AC/C 61/22

**277. W. MONCLIFF(?) TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
CARICKE 5 APRIL 1636**

Acknowledges his gratitude to T.S. 'I have given my father Matthew wherewithall to disingage you'. Signs himself
'your kinsman and servant'

36074/128

**278. THOMAS SMYTH TO HENRY CANTLOE¹ AT FONTELL
29 NOVEMBER 1636**

Concerns the appointment of T.S. as a commissioner and to obtaining a writ of authority and two copies of the commission. Refers to Mr Warre² and Mr Ardeley³ who have dealt with the business, and to 'my servant Edwardes' who will wait upon Cantloe.

36074/148

¹ It seems probable that Henry Cantloe was Henry Saintloe of Fontmell in the parish of Child Okeford, Dorset. See J. Hutchins, *History of Dorset*, 3rd Ed., 1863–70, IV, p. 81. The precise subject of this letter is not clear.

² Roger Warre and Thomas Warre, members of the Warre family of Hestercombe near Taunton, were both feodaries of the Court of Wards. M.J. Hawkins, 'Sales of Wards in Somerset 1603–1641', *Somerset Record Society*, LXVII, 1965, p. XIX; J. Collinson, *op. cit.*, III, p. 262.

For a pedigree of the Warre family of Hestercombe see F.T. Colby (ed.), *Visitation of Somerset 1623*, *Harleian Society*, XI, 1876.

³ This is probably Edward Ernle of Etchilhampton, Wilts, who had married one of the daughters of John Saintloe of Child Okeford. See J. Hutchins, *op. cit.*, IV, p. 81; *V.C.H. Wiltshire*, X, p. 73; F. Brown (ed.), *Abstracts of Somerset Wills*, 1890, VI, p. 26.

279. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH.

HINTON N.D. [? 1636]¹

After six weeks in Dorset he has returned to Hinton. Discusses unspecified disputes over land concerning Mr Gowe and 'Cheek newly come from London'.

'I receaved letters from the Lord Amirall by which I perceave that though they have been a good while at the Court yet the Amirall was not called to give account of his employment till the last week and then his journalls were called for at the Counsell table when his Majesty was present and after the sight of them and scanninge of them the Kinge expressed a very good and gracious acceptance of his service and gave him thanks for it. The Lord Amirall amongst other things wrote to me that the Prince Palatine cominge in the downes and Sir John Penington intending to do him honour there by giving him all his gunnes, the ill luck was that one of the bullets fell into the Prince's shippe and killed two of his servants and a sailler and hurt others for which unhappy accident Sir John Pennington was much affected'.²

AC/C 61/6

¹ The incident referred to in this letter must have occurred when the Elector Palatine came to England in December 1635.

² The Admiral was the Earl of Lindsey, and the rear-admiral for 'the guard of the Narrow Seas' was Sir John Pennington, *D.N.B.*, XLIV, pp. 300–302.

280. THOMAS SMYTH TO WILLIAM BASSETT¹

ASHTON 15 JANUARY 1637

Refers to warrants which Bassett has issued as Sheriff for raising £240 in ship money from the hundreds of Portbury and Bedminster:

'Divers of the inhabitants have repayed unto mee, and I finde them much discontented. Soe weare they upon the like tax in Mr Hodges² yeare. Its true that by Hinton rate³ theis 2 hundreds stand liable unto 3 men apeece, but t'is as true that for this 30 or 40 yeares they have stood discharged of one man, and unto all paies as for Musters, Bridges and Composicons have onelie levied after 2 men, ½ upon each hundred. Howe the abatement came I certenlie know not, more then that Sir Edward Rodney tould me at Wells that Sir Edw. Gorges and my Father obteyned it at a Sessions long since, and place[d] the man upon Winter Stoke and that now they would returne him upon us againe. Mr Hodges repealed his first warrants and renewed them for £400 from theis 2 hundreds, which was obeyed. I never heard that the other £80 was lost unto the King or rayased any dispute whence it lighted. I desier you will allowe as the like favour or if you maie not doe so much; at least so

forbeare to [wait] awhile untill Winterstoke and us have disputed the case. By which meanes your selfe may come the easier by the money and the difference be composed, with lesse charge unto the poore inhabitants. Otherwise I feare you will finde the people rude and addicted unto opposicon. I leave it unto your consideration and present my service unto your selfe and your Lady.

I affectionately remayne
Your freind and servant
Tho. Smyth.

Ashton Jan 15 1636/7

36074/149

¹ William Bassett of Claverton was Sheriff of Somerset 1636–1637.

² Henry Hodges of Haselbury was Sheriff 1634–1636.

³ 'Hinton rate' was the rate of assessment devised for musters at Hinton St George in 1569, which became the 'most anciente, generall and usuale rates of the countye'. See T.G. Barnes, 'The Hinton Rate 1569', *Somerset and Dorset Notes and Queries*, XXVII, 1959, pp. 210–213.

281. THOMAS ATKINSON TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON 22 JANUARY 1637

'Had I beene onely to sitt in Judgement upon my selfe, I ——¹ beene brought in Guilty of unthankfullnes if I had lett slip (? this)¹ opportunity of presenting my service in a line or two by so convenient a messenger. Hee is our manciple, whom both the Colledge occasions and his owne have invited to your Faire att Bristol;² the occasion of whose going hath farther caused Mr President to remember mee of that £30 which hee was pleased to lay downe for mee att the Auditt was 2 years, by vertue of which onely I am enabled still to write Fellow of St Johns. I am not yett able to come out of his debt, that little meanes I have (without the Colledge and my Fellowship) with the best thrift I can use not being of a competency to keepe mee within mine owne ranke. Yett I am and have beene infinitely beholden to him for his holding my head above water, and bestowing the Bursarshipp upon mee this last Auditt; but especially for restoring mee so farre into my Lord's grace his favour, that I have itt under his owne hand (upon the relinquishing of my suite for the Parsonage of Creeke unto Mr Harrison) that himselfe will become my paymaister, and (to use his owne language) requite mee to the full by himselfe, or my Lord of London very speedily; Sir, if I were silent, many eies and eares would bring in evidence how much I am your debtour for my very subsisting; and yett my unfortunatenesse putts mee againe upon itt to be an importunate beggar for this once that you would perfect your owne act, and sett mee upp a Freeman from my ingagement in the suite to Mr President, whom if I knew any how to satisfie without an appeale to your goodnes, I would not have beene so impudent as to sollicite you, knowing my former ingagements, and your extraordinary occasions for disbursing of monies. I have not acquainted this bearer with any part of

this errand, but onely enjoyed him to waite upon you for the delivery of this letter. But if you shall please to doe mee this favour as to give him this money, or (if your great occasions will not permitt) to signify in a word to Mr President, that I shall not bee accompted amongst his desperate debtours, you will by the desobliging of mee to him, engage mee everlastingly to strive to appear what I in present subscribe my selfe

Your most faithfull servant

T. Atkinson

Postscript

Pray bee pleased to present my humblest service to your noble Bed-fellow. I have sent you by this bearer, the greatest novelty Oxford can afford, the booke of Verses for the new borne Lady, which was brought to the Drs and some private Friends this very day and is not to be sold in publique untill Munday'.

Written at foot and the back of the letter, a draft reply from Thomas Smyth:

'I have beene lately at death's doore my Selfe, but I thought you had beene buried; so long a silence has passed betwixt us. —¹ fault not mine, who should have as readily answered any other letters as at present I doe this. It seemes the restitution unto my Lord's grace and favour might easily persuade you to forgett your poore freinds in this corner, else certaynely mee thinkes, or I yet halfe yearely am remembered of your former stragglings, so you should within that com—¹ at least if not oftener, lett mee knowe you live in hope to preferre your selfe, though peradventure not to satisfy my sufferings on your behalfe. If ought needes say I wondered what was become of you; yet am glad to heare you stand so fayrely promised, and shall be more to see some taste of performance once light upon you.

As for the £30 Mr President desires you to remember —¹ I referre my selfe unto the Covenant given him under my hands, which if hee doubt, if I encounter him at London (whether I am likely suddenly to goe) I will make it good unto him in the condition of a Bond. And this is more than my occasions will encourage mee to strayne myselfe unto. I hope it will satisfy him and secure you, if not, I must needds leave you unto his mercy and my selfe to be excused fro any other present satisfaction. And so in much hast I rest.

Your affectionate freind

T.S.

Ashton 22 January 1636/7

AC/C 44/21

¹ Illegible words.

² This is a reference to the fair held in Bristol each year around the feast of the Conversion of St Paul (25 January).

**282. THOMAS SMITH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
CHESTER 28 MARCH 1637**

Is glad to hear of his health and of his wife's safe delivery. Hopes that T.S. will soon visit him; such a visit would do much for his wife's¹ health which has not been good. Refers to the birth of another daughter to T.S., ' . . . if you hold on, and my wife too, you'll be able to people a whole countrey out of your daughters, the Lord blesse them all, and send us money fitly to transfer them'.

AC/C 54/5

¹ Mary Smith, sister of T.S. Mary Smith's family eventually comprised 8 sons and 14 daughters. S.R.O. DD/SAS (C 1193) 5/1, p. 60.

**283. THOMAS TYNDALE¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH
KINGTON, 26 APRIL 1637**

The writer has twice been to Ashton but each time T.S. has been away from home. Refers to 'the moneye yet due unto mee for the house on the Greene' and to dealings over this matter.

36074/129

¹ Thomas Tyndale of Kington St Michael, Wiltshire. He purchased this estate in 1628 having previously owned Eastwood Park in Thornbury, Gloucestershire, see Burke's *Landed Gentry*, 1853, III, p. 1447.

**284. SIR FERDINANDO GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH
CANNINGTON, 27 APRIL 1637**

Refers to business between them and Sir William Hopton and Mr Coventry. Promises to discuss it with T.S. as soon as Mrs Rogers' funeral is over. Sends commendations to T.S. and to his wife and asks to be told of any news from their friends at Oxford.

Endorsed: a long, unfinished draft of a letter in Thomas Smyth's hand and addressed to 'My H(ouore)d Mother'. This refers to the news he has just heard from J. Wynington, and goes on at length to discuss arrangements for a funeral and for the accommodation of the mourners.

AC/C 49/5

**285. WILLIAM GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
OXFORD, 29 MAY 1637**

Has spent most of his time in Oxford with his brother.¹ He had been resolved to spend some time in taking physic, but the project was spoiled by the death of Dr Vall who died with only two hours warning, and is thought to have died of the plague.

Has little news except that there is likely to be

'a great league between us and the King of France, the duchmen stand of, the new Emperor was thoght to be dead to, but he is only sick of an Ague. Tis thought that Prince Robert² shall this somer open the warre betwixt the Spaion and his brother. Some think the Palgrave himself will goe to sea. The whom nuse is that the sope men have ther busines againe, paying £40,000, any body is like to goe the sweter for this sher lining'.

AC/C 51/10

¹ William Gorges was in Oxford visiting his brother Thomas at All Souls' College.

² *Recte* Rupert.

**286. SIR FERDINANDO GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH AT
ASHTON
COVENT GARDEN, LONDON, 12 JULY 1637**

Asks to be excused that he does not write in his own hand, but he is suffering from a weakness in his stomach and loss of appetite.

'All the comfort that I receave is from my Lord Gorges and his lady, who are exceeding carefull to provide mee all thinges necessary for increase of strength or stomacke. I have sent my coach and horses downe and desire you to doe me that favour as to send mee upp your bedd coach; that soe by easie journies I may creepe home to receave the comfort of my friends, and of that aire, which if that helpe not, I shall committ myselfe to him who knowes howe to dispose of mee'.

AC/C 49/6

**287. ELIZABETH GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
CANNINGTON 17 JULY 1637**

Her cousin Tynte¹ has been to Cannington on a visit but has now left. 'Your sister² is in a manor as you lefte her'. Palmer has been treating her. Gives details of her illness, blood, stools, pain in back

and legs, etc. 'For my owne parte I cannot truely saye I am very well, although I strive to make littel shoue of alteration for bodie or minde'. Hopes soon to see him at Cannington, 'We hope to see you hire Wensday nighte, but if it be wyndy wether let me desier you not to come over the passage'³

AC/C 48/20

¹ Presumably a reference to Anne Tynte daughter of Sir Edward Gorge of Wraxall and wife of Edward Tynte of Chelvey.

² Helen, sister of T.S., who was married to Sir Francis Rogers of Cannington.

³ This is presumably a reference to the ferry over the Avon from Long Ashton at Rownham.

**288. THOMAS SMITH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
CHESTER, 17 JULY 1637**

Thanks T.S. for his visit and is glad to know he arrived home safely. Is concerned to hear of the illness of Lady Rogers at Cannington. Refers to an outbreak of spotted fever which has killed many of his neighbours. Discusses the possibility of moving his family to London.

AC/C 54/6

**289. JOHN TYNTE TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON.
26 SEPTEMBER 1637**

Long letter protesting the writer's innocence of the unspecified charges laid against him, and his love and regard for T.S. Refers to his 'Othery tenants' and to 'my brother Gifford'.

36074/127

**290. THOMAS SMYTH TO THOMAS MEAUTYS¹ 'AT THE
COURTE'
ASHTON 2 OCTOBER 1637**

Has heard that Sir William Portman² has sent to London to entreat the assistance of the Lord Keeper and the Lord Chamberlain in preventing the office of sheriff from falling upon him. T.S. reminds Meautys that he was 'an earewitness unto the honourable promise my Lord Chiefe Justice made mee in the Mayor of Bristol's dyneing

roome' that T.S. would not be chosen for the office. Enlists Meautys help in ensuring that his name is not picked, or alternatively, if his name has already been chosen that this commission shall be delivered speedily, since in the previous year Mr Bassett had to wait six weeks before the Pursuivants brought him his authority³. Assures Meautys of his gratitude and mentions his two 'boosome freinds' the owners of Barton and Montacute.⁴

26074/150

¹ Thomas Meautys was clerk to the Privy Council and Musters—Master General, see T.G. Barnes, *Somerset 1625–1640*, 1961, p. 110.

² Sir William Portman of Orchard Portman, a Somerset J.P. He was in fact chosen as Sheriff for the county 1637–1638.

³ William Bassett of Claverton near Bath who was Sheriff of Somerset during 1636–1637.

⁴ John Coventry of Barton Grange in Pitminster near Taunton and Sir Robert Phelips of Montacute.

**291. SIR ROBERT PHELIPS TO THOMAS SMYTH AT
ASHTON**

**MONTACUTE, 10 OCTOBER ———¹
[? 1637]**

Sends his good wishes and news of his intention to visit London.
36074/142 d

¹ There is no indication of the date of this letter. Sir Robert Phelips died in April 1638.

**292. RICHARD WISEMAN¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
LONDON 12 OCTOBER 1637**

Assures T.S. of his gratitude and desire to do him service.
36074/130

¹ Sir Richard Wiseman of Thundersley Hall, Essex, see *D.N.B.*, LXII, p. 246.

293. THE BISHOP OF BRISTOL¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH AND FRANCIS DODDINGTON²**SHERBORNE 17 OCTOBER 1637**

Thanks them for not appointing his servant, Thomas Raynes, as overseer of the poor at Clevedon. Promises that Mr Goddard and Mr Whiting who managed his affairs at Clevedon will investigate all complaints against Raynes.

36074/162

¹ Robert Skinner, Bishop of Bristol 1636–41, *D.N.B.* L 11, pp. 347–348.

² Sir Francis Doddington or Dodington of Barrow Gurney in north Somerset and Combe Sydenham in west Somerset, was a Somerset J.P. and Sheriff 1630–1631. J. Collinson, *op. cit.*, III, p. 519.

294. SIR ROBERT PHELIPS TO THOMAS SMYTH.**N.D. [? 1637]¹**

Hopes to entertain T.S. (? at Montacute) and then to wait on him at Taunton, 'seeing my Lord Poulett is not yet returned from London'.²

36074/142 c

¹ There is no firm indication of the date of this letter, Sir Robert Phelips died in April 1638.

² In view of the enmity between Sir Robert Phelips and Lord Poulett, who was the father-in-law of T.S., it was probably politic for T.S. not to appear too openly friendly with Sir Robert, in spite of the fact that they were closely related by marriage. See T.G. Barnes, *Somerset 1625–1640*, 1961, pp. 281–298. Also Letter 296.

295. SIR ROBERT PHELIPS TO THOMAS SMYTH.**N.D. [? 1637]¹**

Sends details of the illness from which he is suffering and of his consultations with a physician.

36074/142 b

¹ There is no internal hint as to the date of this letter, but Sir Robert Phelips died in April 1638 and it seems likely that the letter was written towards the end of his life.

**296. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
HINTON 1 OCTOBER — [? 1637]¹**

Refers to a dispute between himself and Sir Robert Phelips in which T.S. is acting as mediator. Hopes to live in amity with Phelips in future.

AC/C 61/11

¹ There is no indication of the date of this letter and the bad feeling between Lord Poulett and Sir Robert Phelips was of long standing. T.S. was related to both men and on friendly terms with both. See Letter 294.

**297. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
HINTON 7 MAY — [before 1638]¹**

Thanks him for his good wishes and prayers for the writer's recovery. Is now much better. Wishes T.S. a good journey to Cheshire. Discusses a dispute over the responsibility for arming a soldier about which Sir John Stawell, Sir Ralph Hopton, Mr Walrond and Sir Robert Phelips have gone to London,² 'the matter is not worth the labor and contention . . .'. He himself wished to have no part in it and hoped that charity and descretion would prevail.

Endorsed: Various financial calculations in Thomas Smyth's hand, including 'for buyldings £736 14s 6d.'

AC/C 61/9

¹ There is no firm indication of the date of this letter and disputes about the militia were endemic in Somerset throughout the 1630's, see T.G. Barnes, *Somerset 1625–1640*, 1961, pp. 244–281 and *passim*. The letter was evidently written before Sir Robert Phelips death in April 1638, and in view of the reference to building costs by T.S. may have been as early as 1633 or 1634 when extensive work was being done at Ashton Court.

² All the persons named were Deputy Lieutenants for Somerset.

**298. FLORENCE SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
HINTON 12 JANUARY 1638**

Sends news of various family matters at Hinton and mentions a 'sad and ferful accident that has happened in this plas'. Hopes soon to be home 'to helpe thee and keep thee warme'.

Asks T.S. to send someone to buy the following spices at the fair:¹

'Mace half a pound, cloves half a pound, Simomon a pound, nutmegs 2 pound, peper 2 pound, gingar a pound, saffron an ounce, blu startch 6 pound'.

AC/C 60/6

¹ Probably St Paul's Fair in Bristol, held around 25 January each year.

299. PHILIP HERBERT, EARL OF PEMBROKE AND MONTGOMERY¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH.

WHITEHALL, 7 MARCH 1638

'I understand by one of your fathers my Lord Poulett that he hath committed the care of his rigiment of Foot during the time that he shalbe in his Majesty's service in the North unto you, desyringe me alsoe in the same to give you Warrant and Authority for your Ordering the same. Wherefore in the first place I give his Lordship thanks for his good choyce, then unto your selfe full power and authoritie to take charge of that Rigiment upon you, and to act and doe all manner of things under what style or title soever, incident thereunto, in the quality of a Colonell (till his Lordship shall thinke fitt to resume the Government of ye sayd Rigiment) in as full and ample a manner as his Lordship by anie Commission from me, cold² and ought to have done himself . . . '

36074/132 b

¹ Philip Herbert, 4th Earl of Pembroke and Earl of Montgomery, was Lord Lieutenant of Somerset 1630–1640. *D.N.B.*, XXVI, pp. 208–212.

² Could.

300. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON

HINTON 25 MARCH — [? 1638]

Discusses various complaints against his bailiff, and the stock of conies and deer in his park.

'The anguish of the goute and fever I thank God hath lefte but the dreggs of both hang about me still and keep me lame and [in] aguish every night, but I hope the worst is passed and that tyme and a little medicine more will set me a foote agayn'.

Is not yet well enough to travel to London. 'This last night I heare Sir Robert Heath¹ lay at Mr Henlyes'.²

AC/C 61/8

¹ Sir Robert Heath referred to in the letter was a Judge of Assize on the Western Circuit 1637–1638. *D.N.B.*, XXV, pp. 346–348.

² Robert Henley, a Somerset J.P. of Henley near Crewkerne.

**301. THOMAS SMYTH TO RICHARD FLAMSTED¹ 'AT WELLS
PALLACE'**

ASHTON 29 JUNE [? 1638]²

Refers to negotiations over the presentation of an incumbent by T.S. He has evidently sent his servant to London 'to take a viewe of the gentleman in the pulpitt, and to bryng mee back an accompt of his doctrine and life, such as upon a little stay in Towne hee could discover'. Until T.S. has such an account of the prospective incumbent from his servant he does not wish to proceed further in the matter.

36074/157

¹ Richard Flamsted was secretary to the Bishop of Bath and Wells. F.W. Weaver, *Somerset Incumbents*, 1889, p. 100; P.M. Hembry, *The Bishops of Bath and Wells 1540–1640*, 1967, p. 245.

² It seems probable that this letter is concerned with the appointment of a successor to Thomas Tucker who was incumbent of Long Ashton 1623–1638. He was succeeded by Adam Holland in 1638 and a year later by Richard Foster. F.W. Weaver, *op. cit.* pp. 231–32. See Letter 317.

**302. ELIZABETH PHELIPS¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH
MONTACUTE 23 JULY 1638**

Asks T.S. to intervene in a dispute between her mother and herself which has apparently arisen because she told her father before his death of the debts that her sister had incurred.

AC/C 57/6

¹ Elizabeth Phelips was the daughter of Sir Robert Phelips who died in April 1638 after having made over most of his property to his son, Edward. Her mother Bridget, who was an aunt to T.S., and her two daughters were left improverished. See Letter 304.

303. THOMAS SMYTH TO ARTHUR DODINGTON¹ 'AT THE COURTE'.

ASHTON 22 AUGUST 1638

'My Good Cousen,

It pleases God to proceede in shorting the number of the freinds in my family; having now deprived us of the life of my brother Rogers², whose wyfe dyed this day halfe yeare. You may remember I once endeavoured to procure his sonne a Knighthoode; fearinge what hath now happned, was not farre from comeing to passe. I sending my servant post up, about the wardshipp, which in right of bloode, and most hearty affection, belongs unto none but my selfe, unlesse my mother may bee joyned in it, which I desire: but I suppose her beinge marryed will hynder any such grant. Pray cousen if neede require the petition to bee presented unto His Majesty assist it in the procurement of a gracious answer. For which and all other your good offices really and intentionally afforded mee, you shall upon all wayes of returne and by thankefull acknowledgements perceive mee to bee, your most affectionate freinde and kinsman to serve you,

Thos. Smyth³

Ashton, August 22, 1638.

36074/151 a

¹ Arthur Dodington was evidently a younger son of the Dodington family of Combe Sydenham and Barrow Gurney, see *Calendar of State Papers (Domestic)* 1638–39, p. 583, where he is referred to as 'one of the Grooms of the Chamber'. See also F. Brown (ed.) *Abstracts of Somerset Wills*, 1890, Vol V, p. 59.

² Sir Francis Rogers of Canington who died 22 August 1638.

³ Thomas Smyth obtained the wardship of his nephew Hugh in March 1639 for £2,000. M.J. Hawkins, 'Sale of Wards in Somerset 1603–1641', *Somerset Record Society*, LXVII, 1965, pp. 144–146. See also Letter 307.

304. BRIDGET PHELIPS¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH

MONTACUTE 16 OCTOBER 1638

Understands that T.S. will be at Barton that week and asks that he and 'Mr Co:'² will peruse the articles of agreement between her son and herself since she feels she is being unjustly treated by her son over the rents of lands which had been part of her jointure which she is now to relinquish to her son. Complains of her own poverty and difficulties, of her son's unjust treatment of her and of her childrens' disrespect. Asks T.S. to intervene on her behalf.

AC/C 56/1

¹ Bridget Phelips widow of Sir Robert Phelips of Montacute.

² John Coventry of Barton Grange in Pitminster, Somerset. He had been a political ally of Sir Robert Phelips, see Barnes, *op. cit.* pp. 33–34.

**305. THOMAS SMYTH TO JOHN COVENTRY AT BARTON¹
ASHTON 30 OCTOBER 1638**

Two similar drafts of a letter on the same subject.

Relates to negotiations over the purchase and sale of unidentified lands. The business evidently involved John Coventry's father Thomas Lord Coventry, the Lord Keeper, also Francis and Arthur Dodington³, Henry Poulett, J. Malet⁴ and Cox⁵

36074/152

¹ Barton Grange in Pitminster parish near Taunton.

² Sir Thomas Coventry later Lord Coventry was Lord Chancellor and Keeper of the Great Seal from 1625.

³ For details of the Dodington family of Barrow Gurney and Combe Sydenham see J. Collinson, *op. cit.* III, p. 519. Sir Francis Dodington was Sheriff 1630–1631.

⁴ John Malet of Enmore who had served as a J.P. in 1625.

⁵ Probably William Cox who possessed an estate at Gatcombe in the parish of Long Ashton, see J. Collinson, *op. cit.* p. 302.

**306. NICHOLAS POYNTZ¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
TICKENHAM 29 DECEMBER 1638**

Is prevented by the weather from waiting on T.S. Refers to various business affairs in London and Wells.

36074/131

¹ Nicholas Poyntz possessed the manor of Tickenham in north Somerset, see J. Collinson, *op. cit.* III, p. 165.

**307. DRAFT LETTER: THOMAS SMYTH TO AN UNKNOWN
RECIPIENT**

N.D. [1638]¹

Concerns his nephew Hugh Rogers' wardship and the disputes and competition between the various parties over who should have the

guardianship. Mentions specifically Mr Hele² as a competitor, and his fears that his nephew will be unduly influenced by those who seek to obtain his wardship. Reports that his nephew is very keen to travel and asks advice as to whether it would be in order to send him abroad until the business is settled.

36074/151 b

¹ Sir Francis Rogers died 22 August 1638 leaving a son Hugh aged 16 years who is the subject of this letter. The wardship of Hugh Rogers was purchased by T.S. in March 1639 for £2,000.

² The Hele family owned lands in Portbury, Easton-in-Gordano and elsewhere in north Somerset. See M.J. Hawkins, *op. cit.* pp. 176–177.

308. SIR FERDINANDO GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH

N.D. [1638]¹

Refers to unspecified business they are both involved in with Sir Ralph Hopton and Mr Coventry.

Sends T.S. greetings from his mother 'Mrs Rogers hath taken her leve of all as you have hurd, Sir Franses and his lady salutes you and youres'.

AC/C 49/8

¹ From the reference to 'Mrs Rogers' who died in March 1638 (see Letter 303) this letter is probably of that date.

309. ELIZABETH PHELIPS TO THOMAS SMYTH

MONTACUTE 20 JANUARY — [? 1639]¹

Writes to request T.S. to intervene with her mother over the size of her marriage portion if a match should be concluded between her and Mr Doddridge.²

'Give me leave to tell you I veryly beleeeve if you can bringe my mother to promise £300 I am confident that will carry it. You may try her with a greater some, telling her that his father is offered £2,000 with a wife for him, but for my part I expect not that she should raise mine to that sume and soe I told him . . . '.

AC/C 57/2

¹ This letter is undated by year, but was evidently written after her father's death in April 1638. In 1639 the writer would have been 29 years of age.

² It has not been possible to identify Mr Doddridge.

**310. BRIDGET PHELIPS TO THOMAS SMYTH
MONTACUTE 1 FEBRUARY 1639**

Writes again about the division of property between herself and her son which is to be supervised by T.S. and John Coventry.

Questions various points in the agreement and asks that her brother Robert Gorges¹ might also supervise the settlement.

AC/C 56/2

¹ Sir Robert Gorges of Redlynch near Bruton.

**311. PHILIP HERBERT EARL OF PEMBROKE AND
MONTGOMERY TO LORD POULETT¹
WHITEHALL 7 MARCH 1639**

'My Lord,

Yesterday your Lordships of the second of March came to my hands, by which I find you have disposed of the Letters for the 1200 Foote and 150 Horse to be chosen out of the Trayned Bands etc. And that you have in your absence committed the care of your Regiment to Mr Thomas Smyth your Sonne, to whome accordinge to your desyres I have sent a Temporary Commission for the same and for whome I render you more thanks than I shold for any other, not knowinge elsewhere to deposite this charge in soe fitt a hand. And whereas out of your especiall care of that service your Lordship is pleased to intimate the Necessitie of sending the above menconed men, rather by some purposely chosen, than by any of the Country, yf there shalbe Cause to remove them, I render you much thanks for your advice, but finding from some very intelligent in matters of this Nature that a stranger possibly may touch them with rougher hands than those of their owne countrey I doe the rather adhere to have them conveyed and conducted the latter way'.
36074/132 a

¹ Apparently a copy of this letter was sent to Thomas Smyth.

312. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON**YORK 5 APRIL [1639]**

'Sonne,

I was so harte swollen at parting that I made my expressions to you more by signes than wordes for which you will excuse mee. After I went from Ashton I rested not save the Sunday till I came to York which I reached by the daye assigned, the first of April, and heere found the King accompanied with some few lordes and his servants but without an army or standard displaide the assignment being transferred to Newcastle wither the kinge intends to remove as soon as he hath given order for his affaires and the preparations are made to receive him, in the meane tyme the regiment of horse which will make up the number of two thousand lye about the toune and hear are the officers to exercise them, so that wee shall have the sight of the discipline to entertain us hear.

The Earle of Essex and Sir Jacob Astely¹ are sent to Barwick to put two thousand men into the toune and to fortifye it in case the Scotts have not possessed it before they come which is doubted they would doe, the reste of the Army drawing down that way.

I doe not hear the Covenanters offer any submission but that they possess the strong places and fortify them, banish the Papists, and confiscate the goods of those that will not enter into the covenant, upon which pretence many Scotts have refuge to the kinge dailye of which some I think are honest men others I beleeeve are spies. I am of opinion that our western troops of horse and foote will be spared unless resolution alter which is very possible in these tymes of change.

I doe not perceave wee are nearer any other busenesse save spending of our money these two months at least and then to tell what will become of us belongs to Astrologye. When the Army is framed and the Standard displayed you shall know the condition wee are in. In the meane tyme I would not have your thoughts nor your body wander further than between Ashton and Hinton. This cuntry is full of Prophecies, especially of an olde woman which lived in tymes passed who foretold of the dearness of victualls in this tyme which if wee stay long in it is like to be accomplished.

After I had written this farre a post came to the kinge which brought newes that the Lord Deputy of Ireland hath sent five hundred souldiers which were landed at Carlisle and another post brings word that Sir Jacob Asteley is gone into Barwick and the Earle of Essex within twenty-five miles of it with two thousand foote and three hundred horse and t'is hoped that he will goe in and find the place empty, thease two townes being fortified the inroad into England is stopped and the way opened into Scotland when the kinge pleases.

I am much mended in my health I thank God and doe find this cuntry's ayre and alle to agree very well with mee and the Phisition in whose house I lye can see nothing in my urinall but that I may come home safely after a few months and perhaps kill some of the bucks at Ashton yet before the season passe. In the meane, the God of heaven keep you and all yours

Yr father yt loves you
J. Poulett

I commend my service to my
Lady your mother and to Sir
F. Gorges and tell him that though
I know him to be an olde souldier
and an expert, yet if he weare heare
he would see new discipline.

York 5th of Aprill

To my good sonne Mr
Thomas Smith
At Ashton'.

AC/C 61/3

¹ Sir Jacob Ashley, 1579–1652, see D.N.B., II, pp. 205–206.

313. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH.

YORK 11 APRIL [1639]

'Sonne,

I wrote to you the last weeke and sent my letter by the London poste which before thease I hope are come to your hands. In this toune nothinge is done but takinge counsel and giving out orders none of the body of the Army being lodged hear neather horse nor foote save those of the Nobilitye and the kinges servants. At Selbye seven miles hence the horse and foote have their quarters as soon as they come up which is but slowlye there being not yet above five or six troopes driven together and some few foote which as faste as they come in are sent away to Newcastle whither t'is sayd our next remove will be and shortlye.

Before the kinge come heather, the Earle of Essex and Sir Jacob Asteley weare sent to put 2000 men into Barwyck which was done and the Earle returned heather the last weeke, but then uppon farther consideration the town being found to be ill fortified and not able to make any great defence agaynst an Army and the kinge having some advertisement that the Scotts will not suffer it to be fortified, the Earle of Essex was presentlye sent away agayne to Barwicke and the kinge declared that he would take it well if gentlemen of worth would put themselves into Barwyck, whereunto your two brothers were assigned which I was not otherwise sorry for but that they went from mee in a tyme when I was very sick with the dregges of my Ague and the Goute of which I thanked God I am now reasonable well recovered and uppon my legges agayn, and hope to be able to follow them shortlye. The Earle of Lindsey is appoynted to come into Barwick Easter Eave with 2500 men more by sea yf the wind will give him leave and then they will presentlye fall to work uppon the fortification, the effects whereof you shall hear of shortly. The Scotts fired ther beacon uppon the cominge in of our men to Barwick and this week doe muster and have fortified Edinborough, Delketh Castell —¹ where they took 3000 Arms sent in ayde of the

Marquis Huntley and Dunbarre which is within ten miles of Barwick so that wee beginne to draw neere. There are few volontiers of qualitey in the Army which makes those that are heare the better esteemed and the most of them are gone to Barwick and not many lords the most having ransomed themselves. I was 4 or 5 dayes after I came to York very well but then the stirring of my body I found had shaken abroad the Ague humors which for 4 or 5 dayes made me very sick but having the good happ to be lodged in a doctor's house with a little of his helpe I am abroad agayne. There are few Scotts of the kinges servants about the Court, many come daily to us out of Scotland but noe persons of qualitey, the Duke of Lenox is heare, the Marquis Hamilton is not come with the kinge nor my Ld. Chamberlain but are looked for. I heare of Franc: Hawlyes misfortune who after he had had the good happ to be named for a Lieutenant Colonell to Mr Jeremy Brett had the ill luck to have the regiment broken, all ye captayns displaced and the command given to Sir Simon Harcourt and this for some words which Mr Brett spak to the Ld. Marshall. Whilst I am writinge I am tolde that all the counsell of Scotland and the Justeees are come to the Court their countrymen not permitting them (as they say) to remayne there unless they will sign the Covenant. To tell what will be the end of this worke belongs to Astrologie. In the meane wee pray for peace which God Almightye grant may be and to his protection I committ you and yours.

Yours affectionate father

J. Poulett

Yeork 11th of Aprill'

AC/C 61/4

¹ Word illegible.

**314. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
YORK 19 APRIL [1639]**

'Sonne

In this place every day bringes forth new and various reports of Scotland which serve to entertain us with discourse and to make conjectures uppon. The Scotts are so farre from submitting or disembling that they make themselves as strong as they can and every day drawe from the kinges party to the Covenant, newes being now come that the Marquis Huntley who hath hetherto declared himself for the kinge hath now signed the Covenant by that means those that were of opinion that the kinges drawinge near Scotland with an Army would disunite those people and drawe a party to the kinge find themselves deceived. T^ris true some Scotts come heather pretending they forfeit their cuntry for the king's service but neather the number nor qualitey is considerable. The king sawe seven of his horse troops yesterday at Selbye, which is a toun ten miles hence and now all the quarters of horse and foote have orders

to break upp and to march to Newcastle and the Court is sayd will remove theather ye 28th of Aprill. What the private counsellors or intentions are is not be dived into and to conjecture uppon appearances he must be a better Almanack than I will profess my selfe to be that can determine what will be this somers work. The Armyes draw now together as fast as may be and will be quartered as neere to Scotland as ther be places agreeable to receave it and then as chances.

The Squier Heale is come to Yeork and ambitious of a captayns place amongst the Court troops which my Ld. Chamberlain thinks he hartilye meritts by the expense he hath put himself unto (his brigade making a great part of a troop) and by being a mighty man so that he hath promised him a troop of horse. I find Jack Winter in the towne who looks but poorly yet keeps in good companie with a buff cote and a feather. Sir Ralph Hopton is not yet come to Yeork who is to command a troop of horse of the Court Brigade. If you saw our men with their feathers and buff cotes and bigg lookes you would say the Scotts are like to have but a bad bargeyn in meddling with us. For my part that am not yet come to my buff cote and feather I pray for peace and that the shooke of our arms may not be tried confessinge more confidence and benefitt in that than I can expecte by the force of swordes for the good of all our interests. Heare at Yeork wee have lived easily lazily and fullye now the Army draws into a ——¹ wee must not look for the accomodations we have had. Your brothers are at Barwick but will be commanded back to Newcastle being named to some other employment, this kind of life is able to mak a man lik a solitary one the worse a long time after and to think himselfe asleep when he is awak, for here is nothing but noise of drums and gunns and trumpets and horses and the streets full of Cavaliers and yet are there the fewest volontiers that ever I saw in any army. Yt cannot be long before something will happen to furnish the kingdom with newes. In the meane time I pray God keep you and all yours and preserve us heare that wee may have the happiness to meet agayne. So I remayn

Your affectionate father

J. Poulett

Yeork 19th of April

Pray let Florence receave my
blessings in this postscript.

To my good sonne
Mr Thomas Smith
At Ashton'

AC/C 61/5

¹ Word illegible.

315. THOMAS GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH¹

N.D. [? early 1639]

'Sir Your cousin Betty² hath been in great fear and trouble that her servant Doddridge will appear no more; for she says your letter gives him little encouragement to come on. If you consider her wants and her years, you must pardon her fears: therefore you must be a good man and take pity on her. She hath desired me to draw out a letter of a more pleasing zealous character which may in some sort content the young man. I have shewed it to her, and to your lady mother, and they both desire you will be pleased to transcribe this or something like this and she will send it away in all post to the old Deacon Piggott in the room of your other letter. Pray Sir, satisfy her mind, though the style may seem something too low for you. By this you will free yourself from the accusations for the future. I say no more but remember her wants and age: her wants and age: her wants and age.

Yours
T. Gorges

Send it unsealed if you write
it, that we may be assured,
for Betty is troubled.'

AC/C 59/2

¹ This letter is quoted in full by R. Gorges, *The Story of a Family*, Boston, 1944, pp. 170–171.

² The reference is to Elizabeth Phelps, see Letters 248 and 309. This letter was apparently unsuccessful, for Doddridge did not marry Elizabeth Phelps. She was, however, married in 1642 to John Buckland of West Harptree. S.R.O. DD/SAS (C1193) 5/1 p. 189–190: DD/PH/175.

316. ELIZABETH PHELIPS TO THOMAS SMYTH

MONTACUTE 20 APRIL [? 1639]

Asks his help in 'my late unhappy business concerning Mr Doddridge' and in the 'reconciling of this to me most unfortunate breach'.

'I beseech you do this as soone as you can, and lett me heare from you for untill then I shall live between hope and dispare'.

AC/C 57/5

317. THOMAS GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH
CASWELL 20 JUNE — [1639]¹

Was at Sir Francis Wenman's² when he received the request from Thomas for a character of Mr Boer of whom he has now received the following description from Oxford:

'That he was civill, well disposed, ingenious, well natured, well bred and a handsome man, and that there was no doubt but an able scholler, though never yet putt uppon the publike stage to the view of the world'.

Adds that he had learned from Mr Price that he [Boer] is not willing to preach other than at the times laid down by the Canon, that is once a month, 'he is young and may adventure uppon a frequency heerafter'. Hopes that Thomas will soon be fitted, 'a sober learned levite is a jewell in a house. I hope this Gentleman is so. I assure you I know nothing to the Contrary, yf I did, I would tell you'.³ Writes that the Scottish army has made 'our Generall of the horse with all his troopes retrait uppon a high trot very lately' and that nothing but a parliament will settle them' and make the sacred function humble enough I warrant you'. The northern affairs are in a 'precipe'. 'The noble marquis hath reflected to much uppon himself in the (car)aige⁴ of this great business; yf so he will gain affection of neither side'. Is sorry to hear that Thomas has rheumatism and that 'your lady mother hath taken a tertion ague. I pray God give her health yf it be his will, yf not comfort in her death, at which tyme I am confident the good ould knight will be fitt for new England'. Hopes to visit them soon.

AC/C 51/4

¹ From the references to affairs in Scotland, this letter was evidently written in June 1639, just after the First Bishops' War and the Treaty of Berwick (18 June 1639).

² Sir Francis Wenman of Thame Park and Carswell, Oxfordshire, see Joseph Foster *Alumni Oxonienses*, IV, 1891, p. 1598; Visitation of Oxfordshire, *Harleian Society*, V, 1871, p. 179.

³ Thomas Smyth was at this time concerned with the appointment of an incumbent at Long Ashton. He eventually chose Richard Foster to replace the previous vicar Adam Holland, see F.W. Weaver, *Somerset Incumbents*, Bristol, 1899, pp. 231–232. See also Letter 301.

⁴ Hole is MS.

**318. THOMAS SMITH¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
OXFORD 24 JUNE 1639**

Writes to enquire about his uncle's intention to visit Chester and 'to put you in minde of your last promise which was to take mee along with you, which would bee very convenient both for my father and my selfe, and I hope noe greate trouble to you'.

AC/C 54/8

¹ Thomas Smith was the nephew of Thomas Smyth, son of Sir Thomas Smith of Hough in Cheshire who had married Mary the sister of Thomas Smyth. In 1639 he was aged 16 and was a student at Magdalen College, Oxford. He became a baronet in 1660 and was M.P. for Chester from 1661 until his death in 1675. Joseph Foster, *op. cit.*, IV, p. 1482.

319. BAYNHAM THROCKMORTON¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON

LONDON, 22 JULY 1639

Asks T.S. to convey an enclosed letter to Lord Poulett. He himself is to wait in London until the King arrives. Instructs T.S. to 'provide me some small good white wine against I doe you the honour to visitt you, for your sweete wines have given me a spice of the running goute'.

36074/136 a

¹ Baynham Throckmorton of Totworth and Clowerwall in Gloucestershire. He married Margaret sister and co-heir of Ralph Lord Hopton of Witham in Somerset. Burkes *Extinct and Dormant Baronetcies*, 1844, pp. 526–527.

**320. BRIDGET PHELIPS TO THOMAS SMYTH IN LONDON
REDLYNCH¹ 25 SEPTEMBER 1639**

Refers to a letter from Mr Crofts relating to her daughter.

'I am very sorry the gentleman is of so ill and destaney as to place his affections whear ther will be no hope of obtayning what he desiers, I beseech you perswade him to desist the business without further trouble to himselfe or her friends; for my part I am resolved never to give my daughter my consent (or) blessing to that mach, and so much I desier Mr Crofts to have notis from me.'

Also asks for help from T.S. for other members of her family, and in the continuing dispute between herself and her son over the settlement of her late husbands estate, and over the provision of dowries for her daughters out of the estate.

AC/C 56/3

¹ Bridget Phelps had evidently gone to live with her brother Sir Robert Gorges at Redlynch near Bruton.

**321. FLORENCE SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH 'AT HENIRI
BETES AT THE SINE OF THE RAINDEARE OVER
AGAINST ESEKS HOUSE IN THE STRAN'
ASHTON 26 SEPTEMBER 1639**

Hopes he will soon be home and sends news of the family.

' . . . as we ware going to couth (church) I hard 14 pes of ordinance go of to welcom my Lord Cotington¹ into Bristol, how long he staies I know not. For our owne affaires our corne is all home I thank god except som tith, our hops will be all in this week I hope . . . '.

AC/C 60/7

¹ Francis Lord Cottington, eminent public figure during the reigns of James I and Charles I, Privy Councillor 1628, Master of the Court of Wards 1635. *D.N.B.* XII, pp. 293–4.

**322. SIR ROBERT GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH AT
ASHTON
REDLYNCH, 22 OCTOBER 1639**

Having learnt that the carpets he had sold him are no longer of use to T.S., desires him to accept repayment of his money.¹ Sends commendations from himself and his wife.

AC/C 50/4

¹ See Letter 275.

323. ALEXANDER POPHAM¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH
HOUNDSTREET 12 DECEMBER 1639

Thanks T.S. for his friendly letter and, evidently referring to forthcoming Parliamentary elections, urges him to join with Sir Ralph Hopton, 'for I am sure I have not tow frends more worthy nor that I can more hartely searve in yt'.

36074/133 a

¹ Alexander Popham was the second son of Sir Francis Popham of Littlecote in Wiltshire and Houndstreet in Marksbury parish in north Somerset. Alexander Popham was elected to the Short Parliament in 1640 for both Bath and Minehead and sat for the former. S.W. Bates Harbin, *Members of Parliament for the County of Somerset*, 1939, pp. 167–8.

324. EDWARD PHELIPS TO THOMAS SMYTH.

N.D. [late 1639]

'Deare Tom,

This sodaine resulation for a parlament hath begott much joy amongst al country people, and I hope we shall all reape the benefitt of this meeting if there doe not come some fire amongst the tooe (? tow), but lett that passe and give me leave to demand whether you will appeare there as a knight or burgess, for I cannot learne that any body doth yett declare themselves for Ilchester crosse in our western divition.'

Goes on to suggest that if T.S. joined with Mr Coventry they could easily carry the seat. Wishes him and all the company with him a merry Christmas.

AC/C 58/1

325. EDWARD PHELIPS TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
29 JANUARY [1640]

'Sir This terme hath brought intelligence from all parts of Ingland how they are disposed for there elections, and I find they are like to produce great factions in all parts, the fame of the Robins of the west¹ hath I believe reached the King's eare for I have heard divers privy councillours discourse of them, and truly if necessity doe not over ballance, those proceedings may probably alter the Kings former resolutions for a parlament. I have now visited Durham house² which I finde a most sad spectacle for the living doe allmost resemble the dead. I spake to Mr C. concerning his resolution, but I find him not able as yett to give any by

reason of the uncertainty of the coming out of the writts and his necessary attendance on his father's obsequies into the country'.³

Asks T.S. to write to him and tell him his own intentions so that they may join forces.

AC/C 58/9

¹ It is not clear precisely what is meant by this phrase except that it evidently referred to a group of like-minded men who were possibly a 'popular-Puritan' faction, about which the King and Court were worried. I am indebted to Professor David Underdown for his comments and suggestions concerning this letter. For a similar reference see Letter 356.

² Durham House was on the south side of the Strand, overlooking the Thames. It was occupied by Thomas Lord Coventry, the Lord Keeper. N.G. Brett-James, *The Growth of Stuart London*, 1935, pp. 62, 177, 391, 489.

³ A reference to John Coventry of Barton Grange in Pitminster near Taunton. His father Thomas Lord Coventry (1578–1640), the Lord Keeper, died in 1640. *D.N.B.* XII, pp. 360–362.

**326. THOMAS SMITH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
OXFORD 31 JANUARY 1640**

Sends assurance of his affection and desire to be of service to T.S. and his love to his aunt.

AC/C 54/7

**327. BAYNHAM THROCKMORTON¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH
LONDON 11 FEBRUARY 1640**

'Honest Tom, I confesse I have bin lazy and idle and have not bin soe civill with thee as I ought, and I have nothing to say for my selfe but to aske thy pardon and to promise amendment for the time to come. And now to entertaine thee with the occurrents here, I shall informe thee that the warrant for sendinge out the parliament writts is come forth, but not the writts as yet. Here is diversity of opinions in this particular; some say they will come forth speedily, others beleeeve not till the beginninge of the forty daies (and that is most probable), others talke that the parliament will be deferred till Michelmas (though I beleeeve without ground) for I am not of that opinion; much bussle we heare of in all countries about elections, and it is thought (and not improbably) that the house will spend a greate deale of time at the first sittinge to heare and determine the disputes of elections. One of the Scottish Commissioners (as we call them) is here alredy, the other three expected certainly tomorrow night; and they will appeare in the condition of humble petitioners (as it becomes them). Here are those in the towne that will take upon them

alredy to knowe the effect of their petition and request, but it is beleeved they will strictly stand upon those things agreed upon in their last Assembly and assented unto then by his Majesty's Commissioners there, to have them ratified; and they say they will have noe byshops, and hope his Majesty will make good his royall word and promise to them given at Barwick. And it is certaine they have made greate provisions of ammunition of all kinds, and are much better accomodated for warre than they were the last summer; our Counsell of warre here sitts almost every day, beinge the Lord Admirall who is generall of the field, and the Lord Conwey Lieftenant generall for the horse, and Sir Henry Vane who is now principall Secretary of State in Cooke's place and holds his Tresurers place in the Court, and the Lord Newport, and Coronell Goringe who is to be Coronell generall of the Army (a new title), and Sir Jacob Ashley who is to hold the place he had, and Sir Nicholas Bicon who is to be a Coronell and to commaund Carlile. And much amunition is lately and every day sent downe by sea from hence to Hull where the Magazen lies, and daily course taken for provision of victuall for the Army; soe that we all apprehend and thinke we shall have a boutte this summer with the Scotts.

The Prince Elector remains still a prisoner in Fraunce, and refuseth all conditions of imploiment which the French Kinge offers him, till he may be at liberty and a free man, and it is beleeved that the French Kinge would gladly give him his freedome if he did knowe what colour or pretence or excuse to make for his Keepinge him prisoner all this time. And they say that all the Ambassadors of Christendome that are in Fraunce doe complaine very much at the French court in the Prince Electors behalfe, as a thinge done contrary to the law of Nations to deteine a free Prince in such a manner. And it beleeved and reported that the French Kinge doth keepe him in durance the longer hopinge bo bringe our Kinge to conditions of entringe into a firm leauge with the French and the States against the Emperour and Kinge of Spaine, so they say that the French offer to mainteine twice as many as our Kinge shall and to make the Prince Elector generall of them all and soe to send him into Germany stronge to regaine his owne countrey. But they say that our Kinge will hearken to noe treaty or conditions till his nephew be first sett at liberty. And they say that a greate part of Fraunce is ready to rise up against the Kinge by reason of the excessive impositions that are laied upon them. Baneere hath lately given the Imperialists some defeate as I have bin advertized lately out of the Low Countries; and we daily expect the arrivall of a greate don from Spaine.

In the meane time I must tell you doctor Lam of the Arches² is made the Queenes Chauncelor and was carried yesterday from Somerset house in the Queenes owne coach in great state to Westminster accompanied very nobly, and they say Mr Harry Jermin shall be made a Vicount; it is a mad world Tom.

And now Sir, let me come neerer home and tell you that Sir James Thin hath the honour and happiness to be a servant to my Princes my Lady Isabella Rich, and the match is absolutely concluded; and he hath behaved himselfe like a Cavalier and a man of honour in his offers; for he freely of himselfe offered £1,500 a yeere jointure in present, and it will be £500 a yeere more shortly; and he gives her £500 a yeere for her maintenance, will buy a house in the towne and another in the countrey

neere the towne and will furnish them both nobly and give them to her in jointure, and he told my Lord and Lady Holland that what portion they should very well content him, which is £4.000, and I beleeeve we shall shake our heeles ere longe. And now I thinke I have made your worship amends for my silence all this while, and by that time thou hast made an end of readinge this thou wilt I beleeeve be as weary as I am with writinge it, and therefore noe more at this time, but my humble service to Mastris to whom I wish a happy good houre, and soe farewell Honest Tom, they affectionate freinde and Cousin to serve thee

B.T.

London Febr. 11th 1639/40'.

36074/136 b

¹ Baynham Throckmorton of Totworth and Clowerwall in Gloucestershire, a prominent royalist. See Letter 319.

² Sir John Lambe, Dean of the Court of the Arches, G.E. Aylmer, *The King's Servants*, 1961, pp. 363, 386.

328. JOHN HELE TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON.

CLIFTON 14 FEBRUARY 1640

Concerns some unspecified business relating to an unnamed third party.

36074/135

329. BAYNHAM THROCKMORTON TO THOMAS SMYTH

LONDON 22 FEBRUARY 1640

Discusses the progress of arrangements for summoning Parliament:

'The Scottish Commissioners (or rather petitioners) have bin here some few daies, and upon Thursday last they spake with his Majesty and made a representation of their business to his Majesty, but his Majesty told them that he would let them knowe his roiall will and resolution by my Lord Trequare (who is alsoe here) and they told his Majesty that they were commaunded by the Parliament in Scotland (from whence they have their Commission of negotiation here) not to treat with any other body but his Majesty himselfe, and therefore they humbly desired that they might receive his Majesty's answere and resolution from himselfe, but

the Kinge told them that they must follow his way and not he theires, and soe went from them. And it is beleevved undoubtedly that unless his Majesty shall please to treat with them himselfe and to satisfie them in this particular, they will not stay nor proceede any farther, and then there is nothing to be expected but goinge to Cuffs'.

36074/136 c

330. ELIZABETH GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH
BRISTOL 22 FEBRUARY 1640

Hopes that T.S. and her daughter-in-law came safely to their journeys end and that their children are well. Sends news of estate business, tenancies and lands at Elmington.

AC/C 48/23

331. JOHN POULETT¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
HINTON, 25 — [? February 1640]²

Refers to a letter from T.S. that 'gave us your absolute resoluty on to stand for Knight' Promises to use all his endeavours on behalf 'S and P'.³

36074/138

¹ John Poulett, son and heir of Lord Poulett of Hinton St George, brother-in-law to T.S.

² This letter was probably written in February or March 1640 before the elections for the Short Parliament when T.S. was chosen as one of the Knights of the Shire for Somerset.

³ Possibly Smyth and Popham.

332. ALEXANDER POPHAM TO THOMAS SMYTH
HOUNDSTREET 6 MARCH 1640

Writes concerning the forthcoming election 'My father' intends to canvis all the west for you'. Sends good wishes to Lady Poulett and 'to your oene lady to whome I wish a happie deliverance of her litell Hance'²

Endorsed: A draft letter from Thomas Smyth to an unknown person.

17 MARCH 1640

Sends thanks for offer of help in the election. Mentions 'my cousen Forde', Alexander Popham and Sir Ralph Hopton.

36074/133 b

¹ Sir Francis Popham of Houndstreet.

² Probably a corruption of a Dutch or German phrase 'Hans-en-Kelder' (Hans in the Cellar) meaning an unborn child.

333. THOMAS SMYTH TO THE MAYOR OF BATH¹

ASHTON, 16 MARCH 1640

DRAFT OR COPY.

Concerns the forthcoming election and refers specifically to Mr Popham, Mr Fisher of Witham and Sir Ralph Hopton. Reminds the Mayor of

'... the faier propositions that your selfe and others of the Aldermen your brethren weare pleased to mencon at our beinge with you, but shall leave it to your consideracons. Onely I shall make it a request that in regard the successe of our Country Eleccon stands upon soe uncerten termes, and Mr Popham and my selfe beinge soe much retarded by the operation of a Conjunction that our fortunes herein are very doubtfull, that you wilbe pleased to foreare the choice of your Burgesses, or to engage your selves any further to any that may chance to be suitors unto you for places untill our Eleccon be paste and I shall take it as a special favour'.

36074/153

¹ The Mayor of Bath at this time was William Chapman, *ex inf.* Bath City Record Office.

334. THOMAS SMYTH TO ALEXANDER POPHAM AT HOUNDSTREET

ASHTON 15 MARCH 1640

DRAFT OR COPY

Writes concerning the election and to know 'which way you intend to steere in this businesse for the tyme to come'. Refers to a letter which he has sent 'unto your father . . . which unfolds strange mysteries'.

**ENDORSED WITH ANOTHER DRAFT OR COPY:
THOMAS SMYTH TO SIR FRANCIS POPHAM AT
HOUNDSTREET**

ASHTON 15 MARCH 1640

He has received a letter from Hinton which he encloses and which evidently refers to Sir John Stawell. Points out how much Alexander Popham's respect for Sir Ralph Hopton is applied to his own prejudice and that Sir Ralph's concerns have been to advance his own election and that of Mr Coventry, 'by distractinge your sonnes conjunction with mee'. Suggests that they should consider how Alexander Popham may redeem the time he has lost.

36074/133 d

335. THOMAS SMYTH TO ALEXANDER POPHAM

28 MARCH 1640

DRAFT OR COPY

Fears lest their agreement may be misunderstood. Urges him to take part in the election, 'let me tell you your friends would infinitely rejoyce to see you on the place'. Believes that Sir John Stawell will have a great vote 'and no doubt will not be scrupelous to entertayne it unto his best advantage'.

Advises Popham to find out the electors intentions and to look after his own interests. Suggests that they meet at Whitchurch on the following Sunday.

36074/133 e

336. ALEXANDER POPHAM TO THOMAS SMYTH

HOUNDSTREET N.D. [? MARCH 1640]

Discusses the forthcoming prospect of a free election.

'The elekcion at Bath is tomorrow whear I am sent for to be by eight of the cloke in the morninge, thear stands Sir Cha. Bartle and the Recorder'. Sir Rap. Hopton hath beene lately thear and I knowe not what he hath done. Yf you will be heere tomorrow I will make all the hast bake againe that I can for I longe to speake with you. Yt will be after dinner before I shall get from thence. Sir Cha. Bartle and the Re(corder) are both thear in person. Yf yt wear not so farr I coude wish you weare thear. Pray God bless owr little hawnses² I thinke they will come both together intoe the worlde. Present my searvis to your Lady. I am thy

faithfull frend and servant,
Alexander Popham'

36074/133 c

¹ The Recorder of Bath was Sergeant Edward Hyde, a relative of Sir Edward Hyde, the King's Secretary of State. The election resulted in the return of Alexander Popham and Sir William Bassett as members for Bath. J. Wroughton, *The Civil War in Bath and North Somerset*, 1973, pp. 33, 144.

² See Letter 332 note 2.

**337. BRIDGET PHELIPS TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
REDLYNCH 3 APRIL 1640**

She has received no satisfaction from her son nor any certainty of portions for her daughters. She needs money to purchase Mr Freeke's house at Sherborne. Asks T.S. to intercede on her behalf with her son.

AC/C 54/4

**338. JOHN EDWARDS¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH IN LONDON.
BRISTOL, SHROVE MONDAY 1640**

Writes to ask for directions about various items of estate business, tenancies, leases, fines and herriots, unauthorised felling of timber by tenants, etc.

36074/140 a

¹ John Edwards was the bailiff on the Ashton Court estates. Thomas Smyth was in London attending the Short Parliament 13 April–5 May 1640.

**339. EDWARD PHELIPS TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON.
N.D. [? MAY 1640]¹**

Sends greetings from Westminster. Discusses his own affairs and his mother's intentions over settling her lands, in particular the manor of Muchelney. He has had a saddle cloth made for T.S. which will cost him £20, the tongue and bacon which he has ordered will cost

£3. Is sorry to hear of the death of Rolle the brother-in-law of T.S.²

AC/C 58/12

¹ Edward Phelps was a member of the Short Parliament (13 April–5 May 1640), S.W. Bates Harbin, *Members of Parliament for the County of Somerset*, 1939, pp. 173–174.

² Denis Rolle who had married Margaret Poulett sister of Thomas Smyth's wife Florence, and daughter of Lord Poulett. T. Westcote, *A View of Devonshire in 1630*, Exeter, 1845, p. 594; Visitation of Devon, 1620, *Harleian Society* VI, 1872, p. 245.

340. EDWARD PHELIPS TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
6 JUNE ——— [? 1640]

Evidently written from London. Has no good news to report. He has complied with the request made by T.S. and has sent him

‘6 gammons and 12 touns the best I can gett to please your worship’s pallett. I have likewise bespoke a saddle cloth and all other furniture compleat according to my cosen’s desire’

AC/C 58/11

341. THOMAS SMYTH TO SIR EDWARD BAYNTON
ASHTON 25 JULY 1640

Long discussion of the legal implications of the marriage of Hugh Rogers, nephew and ward of T.S., to Sir Edward’s daughter, Anne. Quotes counsel’s opinion concerning the marriage portion, jointure, settlement of the lands and the provision of a marriage portion for Hugh Roger’s sister. Offers to take Sir Edward to Cannington to show him the lands there in question.

36074/155

342. THOMAS SMYTH TO LADY FRANCES TERRINGHAM¹
ASHTON 23 AUGUST 1640

DRAFT OR COPY.

Enquires after her health and invites her and any other members of her family to Ashton ‘heere to remayne untill wee see some good event of this much dreaded warre with the Scotts’. Reminds her of

her good wishes towards 'my brother Sir John Poulett'. The match which had been proposed for him will not now occur, and T.S. therefore asks her Ladyship to enquire 'whether the Lady Penelope bee nowe free and her freinds disposed to enterteyne your Ladyship's good wishes'.

36074/154

¹ Lady Frances Terringham or Tyringham, formerly Frances Gorges, was the sister of Thomas Smyth's mother, Elizabeth, and of Lady Bridget Phelips. She had married Sir Thomas Tyringham of Tyringham in Buckinghamshire. R. Gorges, *The Story of a Family*, Boston, 1944, p. 117.

343. BRIDGETT PHELIPS TO THOMAS SMYTH

REDLYNCH 31 AUGUST 1640

Informs him of the continuing dispute with her son over the settlement of her late husband's estate.

'I hartyly wish my sonn would give eare and follow really good advise as constantly and willingly as he (? hath)¹ donn this ill counsell, without respect to the honouer of his dead father or his owne repetaicon which will enfenightly suffer with al honest and good men'.

Asks T.S. to return 'the Pettygrey² you had of mine before I removed from Montagew being 2 years scenc, I hope by this tyme you donn with it'.

AC/C 56/5

¹ MS torn.

² ? the Pedigree. See Letter 177.

344. EDWARD PHELIPS TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON

N.D. [? AUGUST 1640]

He has been in Buckinghamshire at the house of W. Pye¹.

Discusses the difficulties of raising money for the army and the small amounts that have been produced.

'The armies are now with in view each of other and the Scottish are the greater in number and much better ordered for there hath ben some slaine in our army through the unskilfullnesse of others, now things are in a desparatt condition and there is noe probable way but by prayer to bring this to a good end'.

AC/C 58/10

¹ Sir Walter Pye, the elder brother of Sir Robert Pye, father-in-law of Edward Phelps. *D.N.B.* XLVII, pp. 71–72.

345. EDWARD PHELIPS TO THOMAS SMYTH
MONTACUTE ? 10 OCTOBER 1640¹

Is glad to learn that T.S. will stand for Ilchester and undertakes to solicit support for him.

‘This country was very well affected towards you before it was canvased, but how it now stands I cannot give you a just account for I heard of noe man’s name that could draw me to Ilchester. Your father Pawlett’s man hath laine at Yevill and labored these parts this senight and I hope to little purpose’

Promises to provide an assessment of the state of opinions in the district, and assures T.S. of a hearty welcome at Montacute.

AC/C 58/3

¹ The MS is faded and the date almost illegible.

346. EDWARD PHELIPS TO THOMAS SMYTH.
19 OCTOBER — [? 1640]

Excuses himself for not having visited Ashton on his way to London.

‘. . . a sodaine distemper which tooke my little jewell Betty put my wife into such a fright that I durst not leave her, we both fearing the child would have had the smale pox, but God be thanked we are in good hope now it is but the meazells’.

Discusses his visit to London and urges T.S. to join him there.

‘There will be many duble elections and I beleive you may easily gett a place if you are not yett provided’.

AC/C 58/6

347. EDWARD PHELIPS TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON.
20 OCTOBER 1640

‘Sir, I am sorry to heare you have had such ill successe at Bridgwater, and to requite your relation with another of the same nature, I am likewise cast out for a wrangler at Ilchester though not fairely but by the knavery

of two or three of my father's condome back frends, soe that I am left to play an after game by bringing it to a dispute in parlament which maks me incapable of waiting on you according to my desire and yours, this ingaging my credit much and my one unskillfulnesse in matters of this nature makes me very laborious and vigilant in the preparing of my businesse for the judgment of the house . . . ¹

AC/C 58/8

¹ See Letter 350 footnote 1.

348. HUGH ROGERS¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH
BROMHAM, 30 OCTOBER 1640

Writes concerning his sister's marriage portion.

'You know better than my selfe how my estate standes, that it be prejudiciall unto me to raise the whole summe, or any part of it, at this present. The money which I receive from Sir Edward Baynton will but pay my debts, and buy my wyfe such necessarys as is fit for me to bestow oppon her. In the meane while my sister shall receive seven in the hundred out of my rents, in consideration of her portion which I conceive will be very sufficient untill Sir Edward Baynton and your selfe shall confer about the manner of raisinge of it. I hope it will likewise suite with your consent, I may receive mine owne rents, that I may the better understand my estate, and have something to live uppon, otherwise I shall be forced to receave the money from Sir Edward Baynton and must expecte from you to pay the Court of Wards.'

AC/C 55/2

¹ Hugh Rogers of Cannington, the nephew of T.S., was aged 18 in 1640. His wardship had been purchased by T.S. in 1638, see M.J. Hawkins, *Sales of Wards in Somerset 1603-1641*, *Somerset Record Society*, LXVII, 1965, pp. 144-146. In 1640 Hugh Rogers had married Anne daughter of Sir Edward Baynton of Bromham, Wiltshire, Burkes *Landed Gentry*, 1853, Vol. II, p. 1136.

349. CHARLES HOWARD¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH.
30 [? OCTOBER] 1640

Regrets that T.S. has not been successful in the election and hopes he will soon procure a seat. He himself has been chosen at Oxford.

36074/137 a

¹ Charles Howard M.P. for Oxford until 18 November 1640 when he entered the House of Lords as Viscount Andover.

**350. BAYNHAM THROCKMORTON TO THOMAS SMYTH
LONDON 21 NOVEMBER 1640**

He will be careful to speak with Lord Poulett on behalf of T.S.

'Charles Berkley' told me yesterday that his uncle² doth prosecute the petition he hath putt in against the election in your county, soe that I beleieve it will come to a new election, and then Thomas you must not be too modest againe but endeavour to doe your selfe right and satisfie your countrey. Since my last I sent you by John Edwards, my Lord Lieutenant³ hath petitioned the upper house for his enlargement expressing therein his greate sense of unhappines by being deprived of the liberty to sitt as a member of that house; my Lord Goringe⁴ spake modestly (yet affectionatly) to the petition in my Lord Lieutenant's behalfe, but was soe strongly opposed and with such reason that his Lordshipp was putt to silence, and my Lord Lieutenant remains still committed. The parliament in Ireland sitts now and have committed Ratcliffe,⁵ but he is sent for hither by Commaund from both houses here and with his Majesty's consent, to be examined in his Lord's busines. My Lord Lieutenant's deputy there would have dissolved the parliament but they would not obey him but doe sitt notwithstandinge; and they have sent over a remonstrance of greevances (consistinge of many heads and very foule matter) by way of petition to my Lord Lieutenant desiringe redresse in them from him, but they have withall presented it to the house of Commons here (despaireinge I presume of reliefe by his Lordship) and they trench upon his Lordship. Yesterday the house of Commons sent Mr Pim with divers others of the house, up to the Lords to crave some things, beinge these: they declared that they had in that house made an order that such members of that house as shall be produced as witnesses in my Lord Lieutenant's cause shall be examined upon oath, and they doe desire that those of the upper house as shall be required to be witnesses in the same cause may likewise be examined upon oath; they desire alsoe that the examinations to be taken against my Lord Lieutenant may be kept private till fitt time to publish them, that soe justice may not be prevented; and lastly they desire that some of their house may be admitted to be present at all the examinations against my Lord Lieutenant at the Committee of the upper house appointed for that business, that soe, they may administer (as occasion shall be offered) such interrogatories and questions as may be for the better discovery of the truth. To this the Lords have as yet returned them noe resolution (being still in debate of the busines) but I find that which sticks most with them is the examination of the Lords upon oath, beinge that which is conceaved to be an infringement of their priviledges, they havinge used in all cases to give their testimony upon their honours and not upon oathe, but I beleieve they will returne their answer and resolution therein this day to the house of Commons. Divers are of opinion that my Lord

Lieutenant will not be concerned in his life; but those of the Select Committee in the Lower house that have the managinge of that business doe not at all doubt to produce and prove abundant matter to make good the accusation of high treason against him. My Lord Byshop of Lincolne is restored to the upper house and all his endowments, and is a frequent speaker there, but his vote runs in all things point blank against his brethrens', who doe chatter very little this parliament, being overawed by the greater bird of prey, and afraid I beleeve to have their white feathers pulled out of their wings if they should flutter too much. The Lower house have now Sir Harry Spiller⁶ and Mr Kilvert⁶ in chase and will I beleieve lash them lustily; and Mr Secretary Windebank⁸ stinkes, for shrewde matters are come in against him, concerninge warrants given by him to protect papists from the penalty of the Lawes made against them, and other fowle matters are laid to his charge; and Mr Porter⁹ will I thinke very shortly be turned out of the Lower house as a projector and papist; and I hope to give little Crumpe Dutton¹⁰ a lift about the busines of Coate and Conduct money, wherein he hath plaid notable pranks. The hundred thousand pounds given by the house, is not yet resolved which way it shall passe in the house, but will I beleieve be speedily determined, because the Scottish Army begin to be in necessity, the northerne counties beinge not able to raise and pay the contribution any longer, nor have paid the full at all. The Scottish Commissioners here arrived, have desired that both they and our commissioners may be confirmed in their Commission of treaty by the approbation of both house of parliament, which is assented to; but with this limitation from the house of Commons [that]¹¹ they will not be concluded by anythinge the Commissioners shall doe with their free consent first given to it in parliament. This is all that hath passed that is material since my last letter.'

Asks for a letter from T.S. Sends good wishes to him and his wife.

36074/136 d

¹ Sir Charles Berkeley of Bruton, Somerset, (1599-1688). M.P. for Bath in the Short Parliament. S.W. Bates Harbin, *Members of Parliament for the County of Somerset*, Taunton, 1939, p. 139.

² Sir Henry Berkeley of Yarlington, Somerset, (c 1579-1667). M.P. for Ilchester in October 1640 but lost the seat when a new election was ordered on a technicality in 1641. M.F. Keeler, *The Long Parliament*, Philadelphia, 1954, p. 108.

³ Thomas Wentworth, Lord Strafford, Lord Deputy of Ireland.

⁴ Lord Goring, a wealthy privy councillor, and prominent royalist, who was later involved in an unsuccessful plot to allow Lord Strafford to escape.

⁵ George Radcliffe, cousin of Thomas Wentworth, and his friend and confidant in Ireland. G.E. Aylmer, *The King's Servants*, 1974, pp. 118, 181-182.

⁶ Sir Henry Spiller was arrested by order of the House of Commons on 18 November 1640 to answer charges relating to his involvement with the Earl of Strafford. *House of Commons Journal 1640-1642*, pp. 30-31.

⁷ Richard Kilvert, a lawyer in the ecclesiastical courts, was arrested on the orders of the Long Parliament on 18 November 1640 for his part in a wine monopoly. *D.N.B.* XXI, p. 119; *House of Commons Journal 1640-1642*, p. 31.

⁸ Sir Francis Windebank, (1582-1646), Secretary of State and M.P. for Corfe

Castle. His unpopularity with Parliament was so marked that he fled to France in December 1640. M.F. Keeler, *op. cit.*, p. 395.

⁹ Endymion Porter, (1587–1649), courtier and M.P. for Droitwich. *Ibid.* p. 311.

¹⁰ John Dutton, (1594–1657), of Sherborne, Gloucestershire, M.P. for Gloucestershire. One of the richest men of his day; he was known as 'Crump' because of his humped back. *Ibid.* pp. 162–163.

¹¹ Hole in MS. Word illegible.

351. JOHN PYNE¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH

**WESTMINSTER' from the Sarycen's Head nigh the Pallace gate'
17 DECEMBER 1640**

Refers to a previous letter he has written and assures T.S. that his steadiness in the service of his country will always bind the writer to his service.

'I will now give you a short account of Parliamentary proceedings: Beckington petition² is preferred against our Bishopp which tooke soe good effect that 3 Parsons are thereon sent for by a Sarjeant att Armes as delinquents viz. Anctill, Huish, etc. There is a select Committee appointed for the examination thereof the Knights and Burgesses of our Countye with some others, our County petition against him is likewise referred unto that Committee with power to receive any farther complaints against this notorious Bishopp soe as it please you to bestowe a jurney next terme or shortly after Christmas with addition of matter and witnesses I doubt not of a spedy dispatch of examination and in conclusion give ease unto our Countrye by deliveringe them from soe oppressive a Person; the excommunications for not bowinge at the name of Jesus, not turninge the Communion Table altarwise etc., doubtless will be held sufficient charges, but whether by way of presentment our enquiry att Sessions will be sufficient I doubt, yet that way you may *de bene esse* gon and make use thereof as you shall see cause at your cominge to London'.

Goes on to discuss disputed elections, the charges from the Scots against Strafford and Laud, the petition of 15,000 Londoners against Bishops, charges against the Lord Keeper and the Judges over Ship Money and other alleged injustices. The House of Commons has also voted that the Canons passed by Convocation are illegal, and a Committee has been appointed to prepare a charge against the Archbishop of Canterbury. 'Soe now you may see we fly att all, 'tis thought tomorrow we shall desier the Lords to sequester the Archbishop'. Adds some foreign news of the difficulties of the Spanish monarchy with revolts in Portugal, Catalonia and elsewhere. The Scots have removed their forces at Newcastle. There is a marriage concluded between the King's second daughter and the son of the

Prince of Orange, with a league between England and the Low Countries.

36074/139 a

¹ John Pyne of Curry Malet a notable supporter of the Parliamentary cause in the Civil War. In the Long Parliament he represented Poole. D. Brunton and D.H. Pennington, *Members of the Long Parliament*, 1968, p. 221.

² A petition from the people of Beckington, Mells and Hemington against their Laudian parsons, see D. Underdown, *Somerset in the Civil War and Interregnum*, 1973, p. 25.

**352. SIR JOHN STAWELL¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
HAM, TUESDAY N.D. [1640]**

Evidently writing concerning election business. Exhorts T.S. to 'relie wholie uppon your merritt and vertue, without joyninge your selfe to anie man in the greate businesse which is now in hande'.

36074/146

¹ Sir John Stawell of Cothelstone had married Elizabeth, daughter and heir of Sir Edward Hext of Low Ham. J.P. for Somerset, Sheriff 1628–29, and Deputy Lieutenant for the county and M.P. for Somerset in the Long Parliament, he was one of the foremost royalists in the county, S.W. Bates Harbin, *op. cit.*, pp. 142–144; T.G. Barnes, *op. cit.*, p. 36.

**353. SAMUEL GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
SATURDAY N.D. [1640]**

Refers to a 'tripartite agreement at Chard' evidently concerning a Parliamentary election. Mentions 'my cousin Poynes' and 'Parson Pounol', and refers to the necessity of finding means to 'harten up the country people, least they grow cold upon a sudden, and take any occasion to stay at home'. He himself intends to visit both Ilchester and Somerton.

36074/143

354. EDWARD PHELIPS TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
N.D. [? October 1640]

Refers to 'the peace'¹ and to money collections. Hopes to come to Montacute in a fortnight.

AC/C 58/14

¹ Probably a reference to the treaty of peace signed with the Scots at Ripon in October 1640.

355. EDWARD PHELIPS TO THOMAS SMYTH.
N.D. [? 1640]

Sends news of his wife's safe delivery of 'a lusty maide' and asks T.S. to be her godfather.

AC/C 58/13

356. EDWARD PHELIPS TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON.
N.D. [? 1640]

Writes concerning the election and that Mr Coventry has been persuaded to stand for election at Ilchester. Hopes that T.S. will also agree to stand for Ilchester.

'... lett mee intreate you to reserve your second voice until I speake with you, which shall be as I come down from London, for I doe not find that Sir R. and Mr Co: are conjoynd as was sayd, nor doe I hope (as is reported) you and Sir J.S.² are linked together by Robin Hood's knot'.³

AC/C 58/2

¹ Sir Ralph Hopton of Witham and Mr John Coventry of Barton Grange.

² Sir John Stawell of Cothelstone.

³ See Letter 325.

357. EDWARD PHELIPS TO THOMAS SMYTH.
N.D. [1640]

Discusses the business of the election at Ilchester, the resolution of

T.S. to stand as one of the Knights of the shire, and the candidature of Sir Ralph Hopton and Mr Coventrye.

AC/C 58/4

358. EDWARD PHELIPS TO THOMAS SMYTH.

N.D. [1640]

Regrets he was unable to visit Ashton but sends 'an abstract of the state of the country'.

'I scarce yet know how firme my owne quarter stands to me, they having ben far over-labored on all sides in my absence, but I will not doubt the affections of those of my neighbours from whome I have never merited the contrary'.

Discusses the candidature of Mr Coventry at Ilchester and the probable votes there.

AC/C 58/5

359. EDWARD PHELIPS TO THOMAS SMYTH.

N.D. [? 1640]

Expresses his disappointment at the result of the election at Ilchester.

'Your brother Paulet had noe probability of receaving this honor had your name ben onely mentioned at the Crosse, but to concurr with your desire though much against my will I have absented my selfe from the election though I had much incouragement from my neighbours who for your service in this short time were grone to a hundred and fifty, which under your servants' conduct would have kissed your hands and most of them double voices, soe lamely hath your brother solicited them. I must make hast for my remote neighbors call upon me to drinke your health whome I could not disingage last night, who will not stirr one foote farther towards Ilchester . . . I am like to be put in my place at Ilchester by Mr Hunt and Sir H. Ber:¹ so little trust is there in such people'.

AC/C 58/7

¹ Robert Hunt of Speckington J.P. and Sir Henry Berkeley of Yarlington J.P. The latter was elected for Ilchester in the Long Parliament, but his election was disallowed in 1641 and he was replaced by Edward Phelips, see S.W. Bates Harbin, *Members of Parliament for the County of Somerset*, 1939, p. 173.

360. CHARLES HOWARD TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
7 JANUARY 1641

Sends news of the difficulties being faced by the army in the north and the strength of the Scots under Lord Argyle. Parliament has received many petitions earnestly praying that episcopacy may be utterly abolished.

'I am credibly informed his Majestye can never consent to yt and then it muste necessarily putt us all upon desperate courses. . . . Praye lett mee know what sence you have in the countrie of these things and whether Somersetshyre prepare anye petition or no?'

36074/137 b

361. JOHN PYNE¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH [AT ASHTON]
WESTMINSTER 2 February 1641

'Noble Sir, I have purused your joint letter directed unto my cosen Popham² and my selfe, and thereuppon we both have together had discourse with Rob: Blake³ whom we finde to stand onto his firste principles which was that if it lay in the compasse of his power he would and yet will conferr the place att Bridgwater on your selfe . . .'

Assures T.S. that Robert Blake is very anxious to secure the Parliamentary seat at Bridgwater for him, but that if it should prove impossible Blake will undertake to represent Bridgwater himself so that 'a serviceable good member should be placed there, and not such a one as Sir Th. Wroth⁴ who would prove but disserviceable unto the publicke'. The consideration that the Episcopacy should come up for debate in Parliament 'did much stirr upp R: B: to make the place sure for your selfe as him'. Refers to the 'likelihood of my Cosen Windhams⁵ removeall . . .' Mentions the great debates in Parliament, especially over Episcopacy and friendly assistance to the Scots.

36074/139 b

¹ John Pyne represented Poole in the Long Parliament. See Letter 351.

² Alexander Popham who represented Bath in the Long Parliament, S.W. Bates Harbin, *op. cit.* p. 167.

³ Robert Blake of Bridgwater. He represented Bridgwater in the Short Parliament, but was not re-elected to the Long Parliament. *D.N.B.*

⁴ Sir Thomas Wrothe of Newton Forster, J.P., Deputy Lieutenant, and Sheriff 1639–40. Recorder of Bridgwater. See Letter 196, note 1.

⁵ Edmund Wyndham whose election as M.P. for Bridgwater in October 1640 was declared void early in 1641. He was replaced as M.P. by Thomas Smyth. S.W. Bates Harbin, *op. cit.* p. 149; Brunton and Pennington, *op. cit.* pp. 222–223.

**362. JOHN EDWARDS TO THOMAS SMYTH IN LONDON
ASHTON 5 MARCH 1641**

Sends an account of estate business, controversy with tenant at Elmington, unauthorised ploughing up of grassland, sub-letting by tenants, decay of tenements and enclosures. Reference to bringing timber from Filwood in Whitchurch to Bristol and thence by barge to Elmington. References also to business journeys he has made to Whitchurch, Farmborough and Bitton.

36074/140 b

**363. FRANCIS DODINGTON TO THOMAS SMYTH
7 MARCH 1641**

'Sir, Both your letters weare deere to me, but the newes of the laste cordiall. I prayse God for my uncle's deliverance: and in gratitude to man have wrighten to Mr Grim: which letter I beseech you lett your servauntt deliver, and when ye see my uncle geive him good counsell to be warie in his sermon¹. My prayers are to God to looke mercifullie on your assemblie and make you off one minde as off one howse.'

Refers to various business matters involving Mr. James, Will Cox, Mr. Pardine and Sir John St: [? Stawell].

'Sir your countrie men from Upphill unto Welles have propounded and hope by Sir Ed. Ro:² to have an acte for a Bridge to stop the Tyde, they came to me to assiste, they finde Pop:³ opposite, Thine⁴ slacke, the work is a common good, I desire to be undoubted off Rod: and beseech you to treat with Pop: and Thine who will reape verie much by itt, but how the Decoy and that will agree I feare and theirfore your countrymen desire your assistance. God grantt I may waitt on you next Terme in London. Remember my humble service to Ar. Dodington, perswade him to retire to Barrowe . . .'⁵

36074/141

¹ A reference to Dr Thomas Gorges who was a chaplain to the King and a noted royalist. See Letter 274 note 1.

² Sir Edward Rodney of Rodney Stoke, J.P., Deputy Lieutenant of Somerset and M.P. for Wells.

³ Sir Francis Popham of Houndstreet who owned extensive areas of moorland near Cheddar, including a profitable duck decoy.

⁴ Sir Thomas Thynne of Longleat; the Thynne family owned much land around Cheddar.

⁵ For Arthur Dodington see Letter 303 Note 1.

**364. ELIZABETH GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH IN LONDON
BRISTOL 8 MARCH 1641**

Hopes that he and all his are in health. 'Your businesses are of so great consequence that for my parte I am lothe to trouble you with our particular affairs.' Hopes that Edwards has kept him informed about estate business and received his decisions.

AC/C48/24

Note: the back and sides of this letter have been used by T.S. for pencil notes, most of them are faded and illegible but they appear to refer to a dispute over lands near Abingdon. There is also a note, possibly from a speech in Parliament, in which the following words can be distinguished ' . . . the Scotts and Puritans were worse than those that plotted the Gunpowder treason, for they were but a few discontented men, but those were many 100 d [hundred] of them . . . '.

**365. ELIZABETH GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH IN LONDON
BRISTOL 15 MARCH 1641**

Sends news of his family and of estate business.

'You have great employments of all Kinds, God prosper you in them and give a blessing to your consultations that the issue may prove to your hartes desiers . . . '

Thanks him for his love and care of Mr. Gorges.

Complains of the difficulties she has with various individuals as well as with estate matters.

'Thus you see how I am troubled with Knaves of all Kindes and cannot tel what course to take with any, beinge fare from yor councel and helpe'.

AC/C48/25

**366. ELIZABETH GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH [IN
LONDON]**

ASHTON 28 MARCH 1641

Sends news of the family and hopes for the success of the great business he is engaged on.

AC/C48/26

**367. ELIZABETH GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH [IN
LONDON]**

ASHTON 30 MARCH 1641

Sends news of the family and of estate business. Prays for a good conclusion 'of your great worke'.

AC/C48/28

368. THOMAS SMYTH TO JOHN EDWARDS

LONDON 31 MARCH 1641

Refers to his negotiations with Sir Edward Baynton concerning the Court of Wards. Requires Edwards to send £20 or £30 a fortnight while he is in London.

'I am in hast and wearied out dayly with attendinge my Lord of Strafford's triall, which has held since Monday seven-night and is not halfe way ended. If hee bee not more speedily dispatch'd the Kyngdome will be undone and I feare we shall have somewhat to doe to ridd the Scotts and bryng this parliament to a successful conclusion.'

36074/156 a

**369. ELIZABETH GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH [IN
LONDON]**

ASHTON PHILIPS 2 APRIL 1641

Hopes he and his family are well, and fears there is little hope of seeing him soon

'being this triall is like to prove so tedious a worke, God send a good conclusion that you maye have contente for the longe wearisome tyme you all spend in this admiered businesse'¹.

AC/C48/27

¹ A reference to the trial of Strafford.

**370. THOMAS GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH [IN LONDON]
ALL SOULS' COLLEGE, OXFORD**

7 APRIL 1641

Asks for news from T.S.

' . . . how all matters are like to goe, whether Deanyries and Prebendaries¹ shall stand or tumble, or my Lord of Strafford. We are all heere in Oxford thorowly reformed, our painted chappells are quite defaced and our Communion Tables fixed in the body of the Quire, and curiously set about with *Albu Gracu*;² this is trew I assure you. It hath binne seene lately in Magdalen's by many as I am informed, and in Queen's College once by your cousin and servant,

Thomas Gorges'

AC/C51/7

¹ Thomas Gorges was himself a Prebendary of Salisbury see Letter 274 Note 1.

² i.e. whitewash.

**371. HUGH POPHAM¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
HOUNDSTREET 30 MAY 1641**

Was sorry not to have been at home to receive T.S. He has spent 'some sportfull houres in musicke and dancing' and wishes T.S. had been with him. Hopes soon to see him in London.

36074/134

¹ Hugh Popham was a younger son of Sir Francis Popham, and the brother of Alexander Popham. He became a Captain in the Parliamentary army and was killed in fighting at Sherborne in April 1643. D. Underdown, *op. cit.*, p. 48.

**372. BAYNHAM THROCKMORTON TO THOMAS SMYTH
BRISTOL 14 JUNE 1641**

He has visited Florence Smyth at Ashton and has been a 'partaker of your journall newes'. Hopes soon to hear that the Bishops have been turned out altogether 'since now there is no other remedy for cure of the disease'. He himself has been engaged as a Commissioner on a detailed survey of the trees on the royal lands in the Forest of Dean. Complains of the waste and spoil of timber made by Winter¹ in the forest and of

'the ill consequence that he a greate papist and that hath done this mischeefe alreedy should have the disposinge of the woods in the forrest and of twenty thousand acres of ground to make a plantation of papists upon it . . .'

Asks for the help of T.S. in making the work of his Commission known to the active members of the House of Commons.

36074/136 e

¹ Sir John Winter of Gloucestershire. For details of his dealings over timber in the Forest of Dean and of his subsequent trial, see W.B. Willcox, *Gloucestershire 1590–1640*, 1940, pp. 191–192.

373. FLORENCE SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH

ASHTON 24 JUNE 1641

'My Deare Hart, I am exseding glad to heare thou art so well and that thos wishest thy selfe at home. For my part tis not day nor nitli that I wish for thee but ourli.'

Sends news of the family and of estate business including a drift or round-up of cattle on the hill to which many tenants failed to come although it had been announced in church. She fears that if the custom had been neglected much longer the right would be lost, 'thus you see the more clounes are favoured the wors they are. Thou wilt parseve I am not idel in thy absence.'

Sends news about the hay crop and difficulties with the mowers. Hopes all his public affairs will be successful.

AC/C60/8

374. JOHN EDWARDS TO THOMAS SMYTH [IN LONDON]

ASHTON 26 JUNE 1641

Refers to various matters of estate business and tenancies.

'The Collier is about the Charcole and wee shall keepe him close to his busines. Our haymaking hath bin much hindered by means of the wett we have had this 4 or 5 daies.'

Gives details of the state of the hay harvest in Long Ashton and Bedminster.

'From henceforth I shall be carefull of what you command concerninge the servants. I have acquainted Mr. Foster¹ with what you write, and first for Mr. Hughe², hee saith that hee loyters as much since you went as hee

did whilst you weare at home, and seldome comes to praiers at nighte. I see Mr. Foster is troubled at it, the childe's good and his engagemēt soe much being at stake, and there beinge as much tyme spent in play as there is in followeing the booke, (as Mr. Foster assures it to bee soe) instead of goeing forward its well yf hee keepe that which hee hath already lerned. Mr. Foster conceaves the way to remidie this is to have the childe kepte to his booke as in a tender and lovinge way, soe in some discreate awe too, and yet without any correction, for he affirmeth hee enclynes not that way, I knowe your wise and fatherlie care will suddenly direct the best herein. For books hee saith that it is not for beggars to be choosers and soe humbly referres it to you.

Some warrants have bin graunted out for brewers that serve unlicenst Tiplers. They serve Lurne (?) twoe or 3 daies, but nowe there is a way found for cousen the Justice. They send for ale by payfulls and fill up their barrells that way and will sell in spighte of any.'

Refers also to 'fishers' that have been bound over, and to other 'justice matters', mentioning specifically Sir Francis [? Dodington] and Sir Ferdinando Gorges.

36074/140 c

¹ Mr. Foster was employed as a tutor at Ashton Court.

² Hugh Smyth, only son of Thomas Smyth, who in 1641 was aged 9.

375. FLORENCE SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH

ASHTON 1 JULY [? 1641]¹

'I think tware good the parlament ware let a while in the contri for that keps gret folks in more aw then wee can our threshers and moers for the wild rascals cannot be goten out of the ale hows bee the wether never so faire, for this fine day I could not get a swarth cot by them so that at this rat wee are lik to mak a tedious buisnes of harvist. Now we shall lok for Sir Fardinan everi day to helpe kep us in beter order'.

Sends news of estate matters, vacant copyhold tenements and live-stock purchased for the estate.

AC/C60/21

¹ There is no firm indication of the date of this letter but it seems probable that it was written to T.S. while he was attending the Long Parliament.

376. FLORENCE SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH

ASHTON 4 JULY [? 1641]

Writes about various aspects of estate business which need his attention. The harvest goes ahead slowly because of the bad weather.

'Hu and I do folo with our books, his Master beeing gon I know not whither to retorne I know not when. The truth is he is grone so dopish and discontented a man at I know not what that I think he rether discourages the child than the child him. . . . when you com home wee most think of some other tuter for the boy who I beleve to be as tracktable as ever he was to one that will keep him in hart.'

AC/C60/19

377. FLORENCE SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH IN LONDON

ASHTON 8 JULY —[? 1641]

'My Deare Hart, I am sori to heare your parlament affairs are at a stop game. I pray God dereckt the King and peopel a rit cors for his glori and our peace and comforts.'

Sends news of estate business and the progress of the hay harvest. Sir Baynham (Throckmorton) has requested some venison, 'I think he is to free of our litel park for wee have many loving frends and naibors to home wee most give venson . . .'

Hugh Rogers has not yet arrived at Ashton. 'Let Herold by me 3 quir of this sised paper and a dozen of hansom smale Marmaled Boxes for hears none good to be had.'

AC/C60/18

378. ANNE TYNTE TO THOMAS SMYTH

12 SEPTEMBER 1641

Sends greetings and good wishes for his health. Presents her service to Sir Ferdinando and his Lady.

36074/126 f

379. FLORENCE SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH IN LONDON
 ‘at Mr. Baglies hous, the King’s Glasers neare Bedford hous in
 the Strand’)

N.D. [? 1641]

Sends various items of household and estate news, and refers to the meeting of Parliament.

‘I should be glad to have thee delt withall as the Burgeses of Bristol. I houp if you find wee may be in danger heare you will remember what a wek famili I have and com to gard us They say the roundheds have mostred this day in Bristol’

AC/C60/17

**380. THOMAS SMYTH TO EDWARD PHELIPS AT
 MONTACUTE.**

ASHTON, 4 [?] OCTOBER 1641

‘To my much valewed Kinseman Edward Philipps Esq give these at Montague. In his absence to his Lady.

Sir. I hope the newes that my wyfe was this night delivered of our sixt daughter will settle my deare cousens mynde in that wee shall now suddenly dispatch away her midwyfe: who hopes to bee with her the end or very begineinge of next weeke. If my yssue had beene masculine, I would have beene revenged on your for the journey I tooke this tyme twelve monthe, to see your sonne Thomas receive the superstitious signe of the Crosse. But now Ile forbear you untill I have once more tried my skill for another boy. I hope wee shall shortly meete at London. In the meane tyme God send my Gossipp an easy parting with her fruite when tis ripe. So I rest

_____,¹

S.R.O. DD/PH/224/33

¹ The signature is torn away and a postscript is illegible, but it is Thomas Smyth’s handwriting.

381. THOMAS SMYTH TO JOHN EDWARDS

LONDON 26 FEBRUARY 1642

‘I have this night had a Gardyner in treaty with mee, but wee can not yet agree; therefore keepe my intentions close, and see what amendment you can make in Swayne,¹ least I should be necessitated to be tied longer to

him then I willingly would. The next weeke wee will buy some early seedes and send downe, in the meane space, as occasion serves lett him prepare some grounde.'

Sends instructions about the horses which are to be made ready to fetch him when he intends to return to Ashton at Lady Day. Asks to be told 'of the abated or increased disorders of all my people'. Enquires about his nephew at Cannington; and mentions a horse which Sir John Poulett has left with his nephew.

'Since I wrote this same the Gardynier has better thought of my tearmes and I believe will accept them; therfore lett the other steere his owne wayes.'

ENDORSED

A letter in a different hand, signed J.H. giving detailed instructions about the horses which are to be sent up to London from Ashton. Mentions also that all the news may be obtained from Sir Ferdinando Gorges. Relates that the King has ordered all the Lords in London who were going discontented into the country, not to depart without his special permission.

Endorsed also are various notes and calculations relating to tenancies, lands, payments of money, etc. apparently made by Edwards, though many are illegible.

36074/156 b

¹ Swayne was presumably the gardener at Ashton Court; he is listed among the estate workmen in 1641, see Appendix II, 426.

382. KING CHARLES I TO THOMAS SMYTH

BEVERLEY 11 JULY 1642

Letter signed by the King informing T.S. that he has been made a Commissioner of Array for Somerset.

'In the execution whereof (and such other publiq services as wee have and shall entrust unto you) your presence care and utmost circumspecion is most necessary. Wee doe therefore hereby require you with all convenient speed to repaire unto the said county and to attend that service, wherein wee doubt not you will so demeane your self as may bee suteable to the good opinion wee have of you and as may most promote the due execution of this Commission, which at this tyme is of so high consequence, not only to the security of the said county, but to the peace of this Kingdom in generall. And because this Commission (by such who declare all things to bee illegall which suite not with their desires as designed) is declared to bee contrary to the lawes, and thereupon you may be summoned by one or both Houses of Parliament as a

delinquent for the execution thereof, wee require you upon your alleagiance not to intermitt or in any sort to neglect our said service by going or removing to London upon any such summons or any other place, save to us, or where it is fitt for you to bee in the prosecution of the said service, and such further command as you shall receive under our owne hand'

This letter is to be his warrant to command whatever assistance he requires¹.

AC/F6/8

¹ On 7 August 1642 Parliament ordered that Thomas Smyth, among others, should be apprehended 'for enforcing the execution of the Commission of Array', and he was declared delinquent in both Houses of Parliament. See *Calendar of State Papers (Domestic)*, 1641–43, p. 366.

APPENDIX I

*Undated Letters to Thomas Smyth
which lack any internal dating evidence*

**383. FLORENCE SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
N.D.**

Discusses various unspecified business matters. Hopes to see him soon. 'Thus having no more to trouble you with all at this time but only to tel thee that I am thy loving worme, Flo Smyth'.

AC/C60/20

**384. FLORENCE SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH
N.D.**

Asks him to send the coach for her [? to Hinton]. 'I hop you will be heare to night, tharefore I will say no more to you at this time but that you shall be very, very well com to me.'

AC/C60/10

**385. LORD POULET TO THOMAS SMYTH
HINTON THURSDAY MORNING
15 —**

Has been unable to travel to Week because of expected visits from Sir John Stawell and 'my brother Fourd and my sister' and George Colles.¹

AC/C61/7

¹ Possibly George Colles of Buckland St. Mary, gent., who by his will dated 18 January 1632 wished to be buried at Hinton St. George, and left bequests to Lord and Lady Poulett, his cousin Denis Rolle and Margaret his wife and to Thomas Smyth and Florence his wife. Frederick Brown, *Abstracts of Somerset Wills*, 1887, Vol I, p. 34.

**386. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
HINTON TUESDAY NIGHT
2 MAY —**

Sends news of his health and of the family at Hinton.

AC/C41/8

**387. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
HINTON 12 DECEMBER —**

Enquires for the health of the family at Ashton and sends his love and blessing to them.

AC/C61/10

**388. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
HINTON 21 JUNE —**

Sends news of his health, 'I am come to my crutches after having beene carried betweene mens' hands and in a chaire almost 3 weeks'.

AC/C61/13

**389. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS AND FLORENCE SMYTH
N.D.**

Sends a messenger to know how they are at Ashton and in particular little Hugh¹ 'that I may know how he doth and with what patience he hath endured his infirmitye. The smale pox is hot at Hinton'

Gives news of his horses and hounds and the sport they have had. Mentions a visit from Francis and Jack Hawley², Jack Arundell³ and Ralph Hopton. 'My tenants of Yeaton⁴ have given me a petition, the copy whereof I send you heare enclosed. What my intentions are I will acquaint you when I see you'.

AC/C61/14

¹ Hugh Smyth, only son of T.S., was born 21 April 1632.

² The Hawley family came from Buckland Sororum near Taunton, see

J. Collinson, *op. cit.* III, p. 262. In a letter to the Duke of Buckingham 16 January 1629 Lord Poulett refers to 'my nephew Frank Hawley', C.S.P.D. Addenda, 1625-1649, p. 259.

³ John Arundell of Chideock, Dorset, see J.P. Rylands, (ed.) *Visitation of Dorset 1623, Harleian Society*, XX, 1885, p. 8.

⁴ Yatton. The petition referred to does not survive with the letter.

390. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
N.D.

Gives news of the health of his family and of their fears of the small pox.

'... some frights we have had by my sonne Amoses indisposition one night who is uppon his legges and comes down into the Parler, and nothing appears uppon him to mak us feare his company. Tom. Horsman hath beene very sicke thease 3 or 4 dayes but it turns not to the small-pox. And this day Will. Poulett is fallen very sicke whose disease is the more likely to turn into small-pox out of his apprehension, himself being feard of it and his mind misgiving him.'

Mentions the precautions they are taking. Gives further news of the business between his tenants and himself which he has left to Edward Rodney to deal with.

AC/C61/15

391. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON
HINTON 7 JULY —

Gives news of his health; he cannot yet throw away his crutches. Refers to an accident involving Mr. William Davies and 'the Dutch boy'. The latter has ridden away to Minehead with Jack (? Poulett's) money 'and carried away the keys of all my clothes with him'. All attempts to find him have been in vain. 'I perceave by this that though a Hue and crye make a great noyse, t's no dangerous business and a man hath ill luck that is caught with them for they creepe too slowlye to overtake a man that walks afore them'.

AC/C61/16

392. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON**20 OCTOBER —**

Writes about some unspecified dispute in which he is engaged and the efforts of T.S. to make peace.¹

AC/C61/17

¹ Possibly a dispute with Sir Robert Phelps, see Letters 291, 294 and 295.

393. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH¹**HINTON 20 DECEMBER —**

Writes of an accident in which his man was badly burnt.

‘. . . the fyere kindled in the house he tells me by a bale of wilde fyer as he certaynlye beleeves thrown into the parler chamber.’²

Bristol Reference Library B28176

¹ This letter exists only in a transcript by L.U. Way in the Bristol Reference Library; it does not survive among the Bristol Record Office MSS.

² It has not been possible to find any details of this incident.

394. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON**N.D.**

Continues to suffer from the gout but has improved since he took the physic recommended by T.S. Is sorry to hear Sir F. Rogers¹ and his cousin are likely to fall into contention.

AC/C61/19

¹ Sir Francis Rogers died 22 August 1638.

395. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH IN LONDON**HINTON 4 MAY —**

Mentions the Earl of Danby¹ and his son-in-law Denis Rolles.

‘Pray send my downe by Chick a paire of sockes to play at tennis in, your

size of the foote will serve for the length only a little longer. Peter Prideaux² and I am a hard match at tennis.'

¹ In 1629 Lord Poulett's two sons had accompanied the Earl of Danby on his embassy in France. C.G. Winn, *The Pouletts of Hinton St. George*, 1976, p. 49.

² Sir Peter Prideaux of Netherton, Devon who married Lord Poulett's sister, Susanna, *Ibid* pp. 46, 120-121.

396. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH

N.D.

Writes of a 'match' (? marriage) which has taken place and of which he has considerable misgivings. Thanks T.S. for his help.

397. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH

HINTON MAY —

Asks for news of T.S. and of 'little Hugh'. Refers to 'my sonne Rolle'. Refers also to the progress of the building work in which T.S. is engaged.¹

AC/C61/23

¹ Possibly a reference to the major work at Ashton Court during 1633 and 1634.

398. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON

BICTON N.D.

Has learnt from Tasker that Florence is ill. Urges T.S. to send for Dr. Bartliffe 'for the good luck he had with me'.

AC/C61/25

399. LORD POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON

N.D.

Sends sympathy and condolences on the death of a child and urges T.S. not to mourn too long or too deeply.

AC/C61/26

400. LORD POULETT TO FLORENCE SMYTH AT ASHTON
N.D.

Urges her not to grieve too deeply for 'that poore little childe for whose infermyte and sufferings I sorrow from my heart.'

Begs her not to abandon herself to melancholy, and

'remember that God hath given you an honest and worthy gentleman to your husband, a plentiful estate and brave boy to inherit it, father and mother yet alive that love you. Set thease in the balance agaynst your sorrows when they oppress you . . .'

AC/C61/27

401. ELIZABETH POULETT¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON

N.D.

Thanks T.S. for his kindness and concern for Lord Poulett. 'The gout is so busy a shaking my Lord by the right hand that he hath no respectt to wright . . .'

AC/C61/28

¹ Elizabeth Poulett wife of Lord Poulett. She was the daughter of Christopher Kenn of Kenn Court, Somerset.

402. ELIZABETH POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON

N.D.

Thanks him for his kind letters and assures him of her love.

AC/C61/29

403. ELIZABETH POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH
BICTON 17 AUGUST —

They have reached Bicton safely and her daughter has given birth to a daughter. 'Sir George Sucetheot' has killed himself . . . the fowrth of the gentelity that hath done it this yeare in this sheare.'

AC/C61/30

¹ It has not been possible to trace a Devonshire gentleman of this name.

404. ELIZABETH POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH
BICTON 24 JANUARY —

Is glad to know that his wife has given birth to another daughter and thanks to God for his goodness towards them.

Refers to 'my Lord's longe and lengring indisposition which though I doe not apprehend to be dangres yet I may compare it to a bed that is haunted with fleas which do annoy rest notwithstanding ther stinges ar not mortall'.

AC/C61/31

405. ELIZABETH POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH
N.D.

Refers to her sons going to Oxford¹ on Dr. Prideaux's² orders and to Dr. Prideaux's sermon, 'as good a sermont as to my thinking I had heard'. Has been very dull and knows of no news to tell him.

AC/C61/32

¹ John and Francis Poulett matriculated at Exeter College, Oxford in 1632. Joseph Foster, *Alumni Oxonienses 1500–1714*, 1891, III p. 1188.

² Dr. John Prideaux of Exeter College, Vice-chancellor of the University 1619–1621, Canon of Christ Church and chaplain to James I and Charles I. *Ibid* pp. 1212–1213.

406. ELIZABETH POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH
N.D.

Writes of how glad she is at the love he shows to her daughter and assures him of her own continuing love.

AC/C61/33

407. ELIZABETH POULETT TO THOMAS SMYTH**HINTON 25 MAY —**

Prays for him and for his safe return from London and the North. Sir John and Lady Stawell have been staying at Hinton.

AC/C61/34

408. HENRY POULETT¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON**28 JUNE —**

Refers to a proposal for the purchase of land evidently near Ashton. 'I will not faile to furnish you with 40 or 50 Irish sheep assoone as oportunity will permitt.' Refers to 'my brother Sidenham'².

AC/C62

¹ Henry Poulett, younger brother of Lord Poulett. C.G. Winn, *op. cit.* pp. 120–121.

² Margery Poulett, sister of John and Henry Poulett had married John Sydenham of Combe, Somerset. *Ibid.*

409. THOMAS PIGGOTT¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON**N.D.**

Assures T.S. of his love and desire to be of service.

AC/C63

¹ This is presumably the Thomas Piggott of Ireland who purchased the manor of Brockley from the Harvey family and took up residence there; after Thomas Smyth's death in 1642 Thomas Piggott married his widow Florence, see J. Collinson, *op. cit.*, II, pp. 121, 293.

410. ANNE TYNTE TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON**N.D.**

Refers to her nephew Trenchard and to Lady Gorges.

' . . . you may dispose of your house at Bristoll to your best advantage'.

36074/126 e

411. ANNE TYNTE TO THOMAS SMYTH

N.D.

Acknowledges her indebtedness to him. Asks him to look after Doll¹.

‘. . . I presume in your house you will lett her entertayne noe suter but one that you shall thinke worthy and a very fitt husband for hir, and if you like the man and my daughter also, you may give him some incouragemente to come againe . . .

. . . desire Doll to looke before she leape’.

Written at the foot of the page, the following draft letter which is without any address and apparently refers to something quite separate from the above.

‘This letter welcomed mee home. It staggers mee, if you can cure mee of that disease, play the farrier and send your receipt this night or early too morrowe, so much good may your supper doe your good worship, for I imagine you are just now drinkeing unto Tom Tinker, and thinkeing upon your servant, T.S.’

36074/126 d

¹ Dorothy Tynte eldest daughter of Edward Tynte of Chelvey and Anne his wife, ‘The Visitation of Somerset 1623’ *Harleian Society*, XI, 1876, p. 113.

412. ANNE TYNTE TO THOMAS SMYTH

N.D.

Has sent her son to him before he goes to Oxford ‘in the hope your good counsell may doe him more good than all his friends besides.’¹

Asks T.S. to warn him against ill behaviour and ‘what a base thing it is to spend his money in drinking’. She has given her son £2 as spending money and £16 ‘to sweet for his tutor’. Asks T.S. to lend him £14 more to make it £30 for the tutor until her rents come in.

36074/126 c

¹ John Tynte matriculated at Exeter College, Oxford 17 April 1635 at the age of 17. Joseph Foster, *Alumni Oxonienses 1500–1714*, 1871, pp. 1212–1213.

413. ANNE TYNTE TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON**N.D.**

Acknowledges her gratitude towards him for his advice about her son. Her son now appears to be about to be married.¹

36074/126 b

¹ John Tynte married Jane, daughter and heir of Hugh Halswell of Halswell, Somerset. J. Collinson, *op. cit.*, II, p. 317.

414. JAMES CROFT TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON**17 SEPTEMBER —**

Recommends a man as a travelling companion for a young gentleman. He has

'already discharged such an office with a young sonne of the Earle of Leicester . . . Hee is a Scotchman but hath scarce ever been in his own countray, hee is of some 26 yeares of age, hee speakes excellent French, and is a good scholler, hee is of a sober mild temper and a gentile behaviour, hee was both tutor and companion to Mr. Sydney, so that hee is not for any other service under advise and direction, and to have to care of his expense and money, which certainly hee may well be trusted with as being a very honest man. Hee expects to be discharged for his diett, Lodging and all other travelling expenses, and for gage I am sure he will not expect lesse than forty pounds a yeare, and when a man is above the degree of a servant few will bee found at so reasonable conditions'.¹

36074/145

¹ It is possible that this letter is concerned with the scheme put forward by T.S. to send Hugh Rogers abroad for a time in 1638–39, while the business of his wardship was completed. See Letters 303 and 307.

415. NICHOLAS HARVEY¹ TO THOMAS SMYTH AT ASHTON**BROCKLEY 6 APRIL —**

Refers to the appointment of a new parson at Brockley to replace Mr. Smart who was apparently moving to Walton. Is glad that 'my teeth shall be no longer sett on edge with this sowre grape Mr. Smart'.²

36074/144

¹ Nicholas Harvey possessed half the manor of Brockley, 'Somerset Visitation 1623', *Harleian Society*, XI, 1876, p. 47.

² Thomas Smart was appointed incumbent of Walton in 1630, see Letter 238. The new incumbent of Brockley in 1630 was Samuel Stringer presented jointly by Thomas Smyth and Nicholas Harvey and it is probable that this is the event referred to here. F.W. Weaver, *Somerset Incumbents*, 1889, p. 245 gives the previous incumbent of Brockley as *Thomas Stuart* (1618–1630); it is possible that *Stuart* is a misreading of *Smart*

416. FERDINANDO GORGES TO THOMAS SMYTH

N.D.

Arrived on Saturday and found all their friends in good health. Asks for news, 'for as we find the times, such mouste be our prosedinges'.

AC/C49/7

417. FLORENCE SMYTH TO THOMAS SMYTH

N.D.

Evidently written from Hinton. She informed T.S. that she has not yet had an opportunity to speak to her father about some unspecified business.

AC/C60/9

APPENDIX II

*Calendar of Miscellaneous Documents
relating to Thomas Smyth***418. EXTRACTS FROM THE WEEKLY ACCOUNTS OF
WAGES AND LABOUR ON THE ESTATE 1632-1636,
WITH PARTICULAR REFERENCE TO BUILDING WORK
AT ASHTON COURT.**

This book of accounts was kept in several different hands, though the early entries are by John Edwards, bailiff on the estate, and are counter-signed by Thomas Smyth. The accounts cover the period 24 March 1631 to 26 March 1636, though with a gap from 29 August to 14 November 1635. The employees mentioned include masons, wheelwrights, carpenters, quarrymen, glaziers, gardeners, farm labourers, a charcoal burner, a mole catcher and a louse catcher. Work listed includes work on the orchard, garden and bowling green, cutting wood, building and maintenance of the wall around the park, haymaking, corn harvest, threshing and general farm work, sheep-shearing, apple picking, cider and beer making, hauling stone, timber, sand and lime, and major work on building and repairs to the house, garden house, stables and out-buildings.

The account book contains numerous references during 1633 and 1634 to major building work at Ashton Court including cutting poles for scaffolding, digging out cellars, digging and carrying freestone, for 'the worke' and for 'the Great Stairs' and 'the Gallery', making a crane and boxes for the masons to haul up stones and mortar, and payments for hauling lime and sand. Clearly substantial building work was being undertaken, but its exact nature is not specified. Stone was evidently obtained from a quarry at Longdown on the estate, from Dundry and from Bath; stone from Bath apparently came down the river by barge and was unloaded at Rownham. Some stone was also brought from Temple Gate in Bristol. There is a reference in September 1633 to a quarry at Rodney Stoke and thereafter there are several references to freestone as well as to tiles coming by boat.

The accounts are far too long and detailed to reproduce in full here,

and the following extracts have been chosen to show something of the extent and scale of the building work. It should be remembered that the following are only occasional payments to estate employees and casual labourers; the accounts of payments to masons, carpenters and other craftsmen have not survived.

23 February 1633

'To John James for himself and his man . . . in helpinge to sett up the worke house for the masons in the greene courte 5s. 4d.'

2 March 1633

'To William Lukins . . . to make hodds and bittles for the masons . . . 11s. 8d.'

9 March 1633

'To John Morgan for . . . mending the waies for the ploughes [i.e. carts] to come from Dundrye 2s. 8d.'

'To Robert Satchfield for . . . pilinge up the Asheler [ashlar] in the courte 2s. 8d.'

30 March 1633

'Payd Austin for so much in the new worke 1s. 0d.'

'Payd Lukins for making a payre of truckles to hall the timber to the buylding upon 1s. 4d.'

Many payments for carriage of freestone from Dundry

29 June 1633

'To Jewell as appeares by his bill . . . for the whooping and new setting the bottom of the water stand for the mortar makers 8d.'

13 July 1633

'To Ned Austen for 6 days to goe with the plow to hall stone to the worke 4s. 0d.'

20 July 1633

'Payde in earnest beinge parte of the price for 40 tunnes of freestone which I nowe boughte at Horscome-head quars £1. 0s. 0d.'

'Payde in earnest unto 2 carryers that have agreeede for the carriage of 30 tunnes of it 7s. 6d.'

3 August 1633

'To James Hoarat and Mathewe Richardes for 6 dayes a peece to carrie freestone in to the worke and to help the Ruff Masons 10s. 0d.'

'To Ned Austen for 5 dayes di to goe with the plowe to halle stones 3s. 8d.'

24 August 1633

'To Ned Austen for 5 dayes to goe with the plowe to halle hay and stones 3s. 4d.'

'To John Darbie for 5 daies to helpe carrie freestone into the worke and helpe ride the seller 4s. 2d.'

'To James Horratte and Mathewe Richards for 5 dayes a peece to worke with him 10s. 0d.'

'To the Lighter men to helpe lade and unlade the Lighter of freestone 2s. 0d.'

31 August 1633

'To Thomas Austen for digging of 97 loade of stones at the oulde Courte at 1d ob the loade 12s. 1d ob'

7 September 1633

'To William Luckens for the roope that searves the 2 winlesses 3s. 0d.'

14 September 1633

'To John Morgan for 3 dayes and one nighte to helpe to lade and unlade the freestone that came from Bathe and to helpe downe with it 2s. 6d. Paide when I went to Rodney Stocke with Christopher Watts and to a man that went with us to shew Watt the quars 3s. 0d.'

12 October 1633

'For the priminge and bandeinge of 14 casments and the settinge in of 42 quarrells of glasse, 2 great quarrells in the garden chamber windowe and a paine of glasse in the maid's chamber 6s. 8d.'

2 November 1633

'To Charles the Collyer for the gathering of 7 carte loade of mosse for the tylers at 1s 6d the loade 10s. 6d.'

23 November 1633

'To William Lukins for 5 daies, John James 5 daies and for 2 of their men for 3 daies di a peece and the other for 6 daies to alter the newe worke £1. 4s. 8d.'

14 December 1633

'To John Bayley for Lyme as appeares by bill £2. 0s. 0d.
Paid to Pearson the joyner for makeinge picture frames as appeares by his bill £2. 0s. 0d.
To the Quarryman at Dundry £2. 0s. 0d.'

17 May 1634

'Paid to Wat. Thorne 5 dayes to ridd the walke of stones and rubbish that is in the garden under the New Buylдинг 3s. 4d.'

Building work evidently continued during 1634 and 1635 but there are far fewer references and most of the payments recorded are for farm work and estate maintenance.

36074/72

419. AGREEMENT FOR SHARING HOUSEHOLD EXPENSES BETWEEN LORD POULETT, ELIZABETH COUNTESS OF ESSEX, DENIS ROLLE AND THOMAS SMYTH

1 SEPTEMBER 1637

Memorandum

The daye and yeare abovesayde it was contracted and agreed upon, between the Rt. Honble. John Ld. Poulett, Elizabeth Contesse of Essex, Denys Rolle and Thomas Smyth Esq. That whereas it is intended mutually betwixt the parties abovenamed, to live together, from Michaelmas next during the space of 7 yeares (if please God to give us so longe life) It is thus to be ordered for the raising of a stoke amongst the

sayd parties, to mayntayne Hospitality and housekeeping, That the sayd John Lord Poulett and Denys Rolle shall paye £800 pounds a piece by even portions at Michaelmas and our Lady day, And the sayd Elizabeth Countesse of Essex shall pay £300 by like even portions and the sayd Thomas Smyth £400 more at the aforesayde dayes of payment, which sayd sum of £2,600 soe to be payde as abovesayde, shall be disposable by the sayd John, Lord Poulett, unto the purpose aforesayd. Provided that it is intended, that the parties must not spend the whole yeare at one place But that one parte of the yeare shall be spent at Henton And there the Lady Poulett and her daughters Rolle and Smyth shall assiste her in makeing provition for the Housekeepinge. And another parte of the yeare to be spent at Bicton and there Mrs. Rolle to take the care of the house upon her and the other third parte of the yeare to bee spent at Ashton And there Mrs. Smyth is in like sorte to take care for all provisions belonging to meate and drinke. All strangers horses at each place respectively are to be defrayed by those that are to manage the affayres of the particular place whear the Household shall then remayne. And for the Horses and doggs of the several parties makeing up the sayd Household they are to be kept at the parties owne charge Only grass horses are to be provided for out of the Demeanes belonging to each House, where their Masters shall be then residing. This is to bee entered uppon att Michaelmas next

Witnese our Handes and sub poena £40 a peice betwixt the sayd parties makeing default

Signed: Elize Essex J. Poulett
 Tho Smyth Denys Rolle

36074/73

420. NOTES ON INCOME AND EXPENDITURE

11 SEPTEMBER 1637

These brief rough notes in Thomas Smyth's hand are headed 'A Note of all the Stocke taken the 11th of September 1637'. They contain *inter alia* the following:

18 Oxen	£130
17 Cowes	£ 68
10 Irish Heifers	£ 30
13 Welsh beasts bought at Priddy Fair	
for £46 to be sold at Michaelmas	£ 59
48 Irish muttons	£ 36
Corn in ricks worth	£240

Also listed are 27 servants, including 'the Foole'. Of these 11 servants were 'to be kept at home at borde wages whilst wee live with my Lord Poulett' and 16 servants were 'to bee carryed with us wheresoever we goe to live'.

Income is calculated at follows:

Rents of manors	£340
Parsonage of Bedminster	£ 66
Tithe wool and lambs	£ 40
The parsonage of Ashton	£ 30
The warren	£ 50
	<hr/>
	£526
Produce of the demesne in money if it were rented	£213
	<hr/>
Total	£739
	<hr/>

Household expenses reckoned at £680.

36074/74¹

¹ For similar calculations by Thomas Smyth dated c. 1640 see 36074/76.

421. THE WILL OF THOMAS SMYTH

27 MARCH 1638

Refers to the uncertainty of life and to the death of many of his nearest and dearest friends within the previous twelve months.

Asserts his firm belief in God and faith in 'the blood of his Son Jesus Christ who died for my sins and rose again for my Justification . . .'
Wishes his body to be buried in 'my vault in the parish church of Longashton' without any unnecessary expenses 'Only in such decent and quiet manor as unto the discrecon of my deere wife and overseers shall seeme most convenient for me and them'.

Bequests to his son, Hugh, his four daughters, Florence, Elizabeth, Mary and Helena, and to his wife, Florence. Directed that his children were to be given a complete and religious education. Long discussion concerning the provision of marriage portions of £2,000 for each of his daughters. Bequests also to his servants and £300 to the deserving poor of three parishes to 'my Kinsman Mr. Edmond Matthews', to 'my deerely beloved sister the lady Smyth wife unto Sir Tho. Smith of Chester Knt.', and to the following persons:

Sir Ferdinando Gorges, Lord Gorges, Sir Theobald Gorges, Edward Phelips of Montacute, Somerset, Samuel Gorges of Wraxall, John Tynte of Chelvey, Sir Francis Doddington of Barrow Gurney, Alexander Popham of Hounstreet and Bartholomew Gifford.

Trustees named as Sir John Poulett, Sir Thomas Smith of Chester and Dr. Paul Godwin.

AC/F7/7¹

¹ P.R.O., P.C.C.44, Pembroke.

For probate of the will see B.R.O. 36074/63.

422. LIST OF SUPPORTERS OF COVENTRY AND HOPTON, POPHAM AND SMYTH¹

N.D. [? early 1640]

Coventrye & Hopton

The Bishop
Sir H. Berckley
Sir Ed. Berckley
Sir Charles Berckley
Sir Ed. Rodeney
Sir Jo. Wyndham
Sir Wm. Portman
Sir John Hele
Mr. Simes
Mr. Phelipps
Mr. Speke
Mr. Bassett
Mr. Cole
Mr. Caple
Mr. Stocker
Mr. Henly
Mr. Bull
Mr. Burrell
Mr. Harrington
Mr. Bampfield
Mr. Farewell
Mr. H. Poulett
Mr. Warres
Sir John Gill
Mr. Wyndham

Popham & Smyth

The Lord Poulett
Sir Francis Popham
Sir John Stawell
Sir Ferdinando Gorges
Sir Robert Gorges
Sir Francis Dodington
Sir John Horner
Mr. Rogers
Mr. Lutterell
Mr. Walrond
Mr. Francis
Mr. Trevilian
Mr. St. Albanes
Mr. Samuell Gorges
Mr. Tynte
Mr. Wynter
Mr. Every
Mr. G. Poulett
Mr. F. Hawley
Mr. Brett
Mr. Preston
Mr. Hallswell
Mr. Boyes
Mr. Foorde
Mr. Poyntz
Mr. Parcivall
Mr. Bridges
Mr. Hipsley
Cap. Morgan

	Cap. Bale	
	Mr. Henly of Leigh	
25	Mr. Whiteington	32

Endorsed:

Little Johns

John Hawley
 Jo. Clarke
 Jo. Steyneinges
 J. Bourne
 Jo. Rose
 John Newton
 John Hodges
 John Champneyes
 John Baynard
 John Cowarde
 John Sydenham
 John Harbine
 12

Little Robines

R. Pyne
 R. Kyrton
 R. Strode
 R. Orenge
 R. Longe
 R. Burnarde
 R. Ashe
 R. Bonners
 R. Cheecke
 R. Sands
 R. Sanders
 R. Blanchard
 Rob. Jones
 Rob. Jones
 Rob. Compton
 Rob. Younge
 Rob. Prinne
 Rob. Cox
 Rob. Sandiford
 Rob. Kenne
 Rob. Cotterell
 Rob. Buckland
 22

36074/57

¹ There is no explanation of these lists, nor are they dated. They are not in Thomas Smyth's handwriting. They presumably date from early in 1640 when all four men were considering whether to seek election as Knights of the Shire for Somerset or for one of the boroughs, see Letters 323-336. No certain explanation has found for the 'Little Johns' and 'Little Robines'. I am indebted to Professor Underdown for his help in this matter.

**423. AGREEMENT MADE BETWEEN JOHN COVENTRY, SIR
RALPH HOPTON AND THOMAS SMYTH TO CEASE
THEIR ATTEMPTS TO BE ELECTED KNIGHTS OF THE
SHIRE FOR SOMERSET**

24 MARCH 1640

It is this day agreed betweene us whose names are underwritten that wee will proceed noe further in labouringe for voics to be Knts of the Shire, And that wee will and doe disingage all the Freeholders from any promises made unto us or either of us to that purpose, and doe leave them at liberty to choose such Gentlemen of Worth as they shall thinke fitt. And wee promise each to other that neither of us will be present at th'eleccon of the Knights, nor use any endeavours for the obteyninge that place, desieringe alsoe that our Friends will as much as in them lieth make knowne and publishe this our agreement, and alsoe endeavour that this our agreement be on all sides observed.

J. Coventry
Ralph Hopton
Tho. Smyth

36074/49

**424. COPY OF THE INDENTURE RETURNING SIR RALPH
HOPTON AND THOMAS SMYTH AS KNIGHTS OF THE
SHIRE TO REPRESENT SOMERSET IN THE SHORT
PARLIAMENT.¹**

ILCHESTER 30 MARCH 1640

The Latin indenture names Thomas Wrothe sheriff of Somerset, John Poulett of Hinton St. George and 10 other gentlemen 'cum multis aliis personis', as well as Sir Ralph Hopton of Witham and Thomas Smith of Long Ashton.

36074/50

¹ It is not clear how the two men came to be elected only 6 days after signing an agreement to cease their attempts to gain election, but clearly the agreement broke down almost immediately.

**425. ROUGH NOTES BY THOMAS SMYTH ON COINAGE,
MONEY SUPPLIES, SPANISH GOLD AND
PARLIAMENTARY BUSINESS**

N.D. [¹? 1640]¹

'The merchant adventurers are to give an answere too morrowe at 2 o th clocke in the afternoone whether they will accept of £13 13s. 4d. in the C losse for the return of their money or whether and for what they will return C in Dutch money or to give a positive answere whether they will lend us the £50,000 at 8 pcs C without any expectation of the £150,000.'

Further rough notes on the relative values of English and Spanish coinage, and on 'Spanish golde the intrinsecall valewe comp. with our coynage'. Mentions the opinions of Sir Peter Ricolt and Nathan Writh.

'Voted that all those that will bryng in money for the present occasion within 10 dayes shall have £10 per C and bee esteemed to doe an acceptable service.

Voted that whosoever shall bryng in mony towards this occasion shall have security out of ye £400,000, ye 1st lent ye 1st payd.

36074/59

¹ These brief notes possibly relate to the Short Parliament (13 April–5 May 1640) of which T.S. was a member. The State Papers for July 1640 record a discussion on the relative values of different coinage, and the 'true intrinsical value' of various coins, especially the Spanish riall and six dollar. There is also a petition from the Merchant Adventurers, Goldsmiths and others to the King regarding £110,000 which they had sent to the Mint to be coined and which had been detained on the orders of the King. Cal. State Papers (Domestic) 1640 pp. 463, 499, 543–544.

426. NOTES ON HOUSEHOLD EXPENSES 1641

The following rough notes and calculations are in Thomas Smyth's hand.

The Family I intend to keepe this yeare 1641

Tovey, Gough, Edwards, Earle	4)
Herault, Herault, Toms	3)
Robine, Mighill, Carpenter	3)
Swaine, Uske, Tasker	3) – (Wages £67)
Watt of ye Kit., Hellier	2)
Austine, the Foole	2)
Hall table	17
Sylvester, Nayler, Adams	3)
Alse, Mary, Jane, B. Selfe	4) – (Wages £20)
Hyndes table	7

Chambermaydes	
Kate, Grace, Judethe	3
Nan, Mary	2
	5

Our owne Table	
My selfe, wyfe, 5 children	
and Mr. Foster ¹	8
So in toto	37

Expenses to mayntayne this family

	£
First in wages	100
22 beeves at £5 per beeve	110
100 sheepe at 13s 4d	66
340 bushells of malt	52
In bread we spend £5 per month	60
In Acates ² etc	80
In wyne	40
In spice	20
In soape	5
In cole	15
	<u>548</u>

If families bee joyned this will be my —³

Sir Ferd ⁴ , my mother, Nan	3
Nan Longman, C. Younge, Nan	
Tovey, a wash mayde	4
Men	
Catchmer, Cutts, Grevile,	
Battson, Hancky, Will Dandoe	7
	<u>14</u>

The family tables

At our owne table	11
At the Hall Table	24
Chambermaydes	7
Out folkes	9
	<u>51</u>

What we shall spend more with this family than that of 37.

	£
First 100 sheepe more	60
12 beeves at £5	60
In beere	27
In breade 10s per weeke	26
Acates	50
In wyne, spice, etc.	20
	<u>243</u>

To this add the former which is	548
And so to joyne houses will spend	
yearely	<u>791</u>

Of this my mother might allowe £300
 And I the other £500
 To raise ye £500 thus:

	£
My old rents are	340
My parsonage of Bed. and Ash. ⁵	100
My tith and flocke	40
Bed. moore will yeild	<u>20</u>
	£ <u>500</u>

36074/78

¹ Mr. Foster was the tutor to Hugh Smyth, see Letter 374.

² 'Acates' were all the other provisions which had to be purchased for the household.

³ Word illegible.

⁴ Sir Ferdinando Gorges, step-father of Thomas Smyth.

⁵ Bedminster and Long Ashton.

427. ELECTION OF THOMAS SMYTH AS MEMBER OF PARLIAMENT FOR BRIDGWATER

FEBRUARY 1641

- (a) Copy of the writ to Humphrey Blake, Mayor of Bridgwater, to elect another burgess in place of Edward Wyndham who had been removed from the House of Commons as a monopolist¹.
 22 January 1641
- (b) Copy of the Warrant of John Hippisley, sheriff of Somerset, to the Mayor of Bridgwater to select a new burgess in place of Edward Wyndham.
 6 February 1641
- (c) Copy of the indenture from John Hippisley to the Mayor and burgesses of Bridgwater to select Thomas Smyth Esq. a burgess of Bridgwater.

8 February 1641

36074/51

¹ Edward Wyndham was involved in the very unpopular soap monopoly, see D. Brunton and D.H. Pennington, *Members of the Long Parliament*, 1968, p. 57.

428. NOTES MADE BY THOMAS SMYTH ON THE MILITARY ORGANISATION OF SOMERSET; ENDORSED WITH BRIEF JOTTINGS APPARENTLY REFERRING TO PROCEEDINGS IN PARLIAMENT DURING MAY 1641

'The Earl of Hartford and the Lord Phillip Harbert are our Lord Lieutenants.¹

Deputy Lieutenants wee conceive at this present there are none.

The Armes of the trayned bans should be 4000, but the laste yeare there were 2000 delivered unto the soldiers that were impressed for his Majesty's service in the Northe, which soldiers growinge mutinous before they went out of the County, the Deputy Lieutenants beinge in greate hazard of their lives were enforced to leave the Rendevouze; and so the many of the Armes were Imbeselled, pawned or spoyled.²

There are 6 troopes of Horse contayneinge 50 men in a Troope.

There are 4 Magazines in the County.

We have neither Castle nor Forte in our County that is ——³.

Nor any Gentlemen of quality or that beares any office that is (not well affected)⁴ a papiste or popishly affected.'

Endorsed: Brief rough notes apparently made by Thomas Smyth during a debate in Parliament in May 1641. Refers to 'the protestation lately made by members of this House ——⁵ the true Reformed Protestant Religion?⁶ Also refers to the maintenance of the rites and ceremonies and form of worship, discipline and government of the Church of England, and to the interpretation of certain unspecified words.

36074/56

¹ William Seymour 2nd Earl of Hartford and Philip Lord Herbert, Lords Lieutenant of Somerset.

² For details of this incident see T.G. Barnes, *Somerset 1625-1640*, 1961, pp. 273-277 and passim.

³ Left blank.

⁴ 'not well affected' crossed out.

⁵ Edge of paper torn away.

⁶ The Protestation to defend the privileges of Parliament and the Protestant religion was taken by the members of the House of Commons on 3 May 1641

**429. FREEDOM OF BRISTOL GRANTED TO THOMAS SMYTH
28 SEPTEMBER 1641**

'Knowe all men by theis presentes, That wee the Mayor, Aldermen and Common Councill of the Cittie of Bristoll, aswell for the mutuall Love and Amitie which for many years past hath bene by and betweene the Burgesses and Inhabitants of the said Cittie and the right worshipfull

gent. Thomas Smith of Long Aishton in the Countie of Somerset, Esquire, and other his Ancestors and Allyes, as alsoe for the better contynuacon of their annient freindshipp for the time to come, and more especially, for the Love and good respect which the said Thomas Smith hath and beareth towards the said Cittie and the Burgesses and Inhabitants thereof, Have and by theis presentes they the said Mayor, Aldermen and Common Councell doe admitt and receive him the said Thomas Smith Esquire into the Liberties and Franchises of the said Cittie, To Holde, perceive and enjoy the same, with all the Ymmunities, free Customes, Priviledges and Advantages thereof in as large ample and beneficiall manner to all intents, construccions and purposes, as anie other freeman and Burgesse whatsoever of the said Cittie hath or ought to have or enjoy the same. In Witness whereof wee have caused our common-Seale of the said Cittie to be hereunto sett and affixed, Yeaven this eight and twentithe daie of September in the Seventeenth yeare of the Raigne of our Sovereigne Lord Charles by the grace of God of England, Scotland France and Ireland Kinge, defender of the faith etc. 1641.'

36074/77

430. NOTE OF THE COSTS OF THOMAS SMYTH'S FUNERAL

[Thomas Smyth died at Cardiff on 2 October 1642. This account was evidently kept by Florence Smyth on behalf of her son Hugh who was then 10 years of age.]

'An accompt of what I have paid for my sonne Hughe since 2nd of October 1642 at which time his father died.

For his father's coffin covered over with lead	£5. 17s. 6d.
The garison soldiers	£2. 0s. 0d.
The clarke, sexton and ringers	£1. 0s. 0d.
To the prisoners and the poore	£1. 1s. 6d.
Torches and candles	8s. 0d.
Black riban	£7. 16s. 0d.
The apothecaries bill	£4. 10s. 0d.
To a woman that tended him and washed his clothes	£1. 16s. 6d.
To a boatman by whom hee sent	
Ralphe Haggard into England	10s. 0d.
For burned wyne	4s. 0d.
For horse meate	£1. 3s. 8d.
To the searcher, the poore, the watchmen at the boate side	4s. 0d.
To the boatman that brought the corpse over	£1. 1s. 0d.
All this at Cardiff	<u>£28. 1s. 8d.</u>

To a physitian at Cardiff

To John Morgan for scutchions etc.

For work on the grave and setting up the coat of arms etc.

Total costs £137. 17s. 0d.

36074/79

[Note that another apparently later copy of this list adds the following items to those at the end, although again without specifying the sums of money spent.]

'To Tripp for endeavouring to go to the King with a petition about the wardship of my son.

To Tovey for effecting that which Trip endeavoured and could not
To Christ. Watts for making the Crest and setting in the iron
work into the wall about my Husband's funeral rights in the church.
Left with my Lord when I went from Cardiff.'

AC/F9/1

INDEX

- Abergavenny (Abergayne), 32
 Abbots Leigh, Som, 13, 15, 18
 Agose, Sir James, 21
 agriculture, 40–1, 112, 169, 173–5, 177, 193–4
 see also cattle, sheep, horses
 Aishford, . . ., 116
 alehouses, 16, 78, 174
 Almondsbury, Glos, 84
 Alvyn, Clement, 17
 ambler, (horse trainer), 78
 Anthony, Thomas, 86
 Antonio, Don, pretender to the Portuguese throne, 38
 Armada, the, 36
 armour, 13
 Arthur family, xv, 41
 Thomas, 23, 41
 Arundel,
 Ann, 31
 Countess of, 73
 John, 180–1
 Sir Thomas, ix, 7–8
 Ash, Mr, 22
 Ashe, Mr, 40, 47, 196
 Ashcett, Duke de, 68
 Ashley, Sir Jacob, 142, 152
 Ashton Court, ix, x, xiii–xv, xix–xxiii, 18–9, 30, 35, 40, 50, 51, 56–9, 61–80, 82–3, 85–9, 92, 94–6, 100–2, 105–6, 109–11, 114, 116–7, 119–20, 124, 126–33, 136–9, 142–3, 148–59, 165–71, 174–5, 180–4, 186, 188
 garden, 112, 176–8, 179, 190
 building work at, 87–8, 121, 135, 183, 190–2
 see also Ashton, Long
 Ashton, Long, ix–xi, xiv–xvii, xxi, 3–9, 12–15, 18, 20–8, 30–2, 34–6, 40, 46–7, 50–2, 54–9, 61, 132, 139, 173, 194, 202
 Annuity payable on, 7, 8
 Clarken Lane, 46
 Church House, 4
 Manor of, 6, 7
 Redyates, 46
 Ashton Meriets, x, 3, 4, 5
 Ashton Philips, xvi, 4(n4), 123, 171
 Ashton Theynes, 4(n4)
 Askey, Thomas, of Clapton, Som, 22
 Assizes, 14, 20, 53, 77, 119
 astrology, 142, 144
 Astwell, 88
 Atkinson, Thomas, tutor to Thomas Smyth, xvii, xxii, 58, 61, 63–9, 74, 76, 84–5, 93, 95, 98, 100, 128–9
 Austen, Ned, 191, 198
 Thomas, 192
 Austria, xvi
 Archduke of, xvi
 Aylburton, near Lydney, Glos, ix
 Azores, the, xi

 Baber, Edward, 24, 25(n3), 96
 bacon, 17, 157
 Baillie, Dr, of Bath, 51
 Baker, Mr, 14
 Bale, Capt, 196
 Ball, . . ., 60
 Nurse, 72
 Ballard, Mr, St John's College, Oxford, 62, 68, 95
 Bampffield, Mr, 195
 Banbury, Oxon, 112
 Barkeley, Mr, 24, 38
 Barlow, Francis, 4
 Barnaby, Mr, 62
 Barratts, Richard, 86
 Barrs Court, in Bitton parish, Glos, 102, 107
 Bartle, Sir Charles, 156
 Barton Grange, in Pitminster, Som, 139
 Bassett, Richard, 22, 23
 William, 118, 127, 133, 157, 195
 Basshes, Mr, 24
 Bath, x, 24, 26, 77, 78, 101, 115, 156,

- 157, 190, 192
 Mayor of, 51, 155
 Bath and Wells, bishop of, 92, 137, 195
 Bathforum, 40
 Bathampton, 40
 Battington, 48
 Bayley, John, 192
 Baylie (Baily), Richard, 62, 63, 64, 68, 75
 Baynard, John, 196
 Baynton, Sir Edward, 158, 161, 171
 Beare, . . ., 37
 beaver, 56, 108
 Beckington, Som, 164
 Bedminster, xi, 14, 96, 127, 173, 194
 Berkeley Castle, Glos, 35
 Berkeley family, xv
 Charles, 162, 163, 195
 Sir Edward, 195
 Henry, 35
 Sir Henry, 162–3, 167, 195
 Sir Maurice, 11, 12(n3), 18, 25, 48
 Richard, 23, 42–4, 45
 Beron, Sir John, 101
 Berwick-on-Tweed, 142–5, 152
 Betty (Bettie), Henry, tailor, 58–9, 61, 65–6, 68, 70, 78, 85, 87, 89, 95, 149
 Bicton, Devon, 126, 183, 184–5, 193
 Bidwell (Bedell), Robert, 4, 5(n7)
 Birkin, Anthony, 86
 Bishops Lydeard, Som, xiii
 Bishopsworth, Som, xvi, 18
 Bisse, John, 22
 Bitton, Glos, 169
 blacksmith, 19
 Blake, Humphrey, 200
 Robert, 168
 Blanch(e), Robert, 25–6
 Blanche, John, xiv, xxi, 19, 21, 25–6
 Blanchard, R. . ., 196
 Blewet, John, of Holcombe, Devon, 99
 Blue Anchor, sign of, 87, 112
 Boer, Mr, 147
 Bonners, R, 196
 boots, 54, 56
 Bordeaux, xi
 Boswell, . . ., 51
 Botterell, Oliver, 16
 Bourbon, Louis de, Comte de Soissons, 69
 Bourne, J, 196
 bow and arrow, 19
 bowls, 56, 72
 Bowyer, Tom, 93, 95
 Boyes, Mr, 195
 Bradstone, Robert, 6, 23, 42
 Bradwells Down, 40
 Bream, in Newland parish, Glos, 36
 Breerwood family of Chester, 118
 Bret, Sir Robert, 49
 Bret, Mr, 195
 bride-point, 114
 Bridges, Mr, 195
 Bridgwater, Som, x, xii, xviii, xx, 85, 92, 160, 168, 200
 Bridgwater, Earl of, 121
 Bristol, ix–xii, xvii, xx, xxi, 16, 38, 53, 57, 82, 94, 101, 107–8, 120, 149, 154, 157, 169–70, 176
 Bishop of, 134
 Fair, 30, 91, 128, 136
 Freedom of, 201–2
 Great House, xviii, 34
 Hotwells, 76, 107
 Laffords Gate, 44
 Mayor of, 10, 47, 132, 201–2
 Merchant Venturers, 44(n1), 60(n1)
 Queen Elizabeth's Hospital, 25
 Red Lodge, 87
 St Augustine, 12
 St James, 37
 St Leonard, 12(n1)
 St Stephen, 44(n1)
 Temple Gate, 190
 Brockley, Som, 109, 188
 Bromham, Wilts, 161
 Brook, David, 6
 Brooke, Hugh, 3, 4, 6(n1)
 Browne, Humphrey, 94
 Bruer, . . ., 37
 Bruton, Som, 10, 12(n3), 50
 Bryanston, Dors, 8(n1)
 Buckingham, Duke of, 56, 68, 74, 75, 81, 92–3, 94, 102–3, 181(n2)
 Buckinghamshire, 45, 159
 Buckland family of West Harptree, Som, 15(n2), 146
 Robert, 196
 Thomas, 15
 Bulbecke, Mr, 36
 Bull, Mr, 195
 Burnaby, Sir Richard, 67
 Burnarde, R, 196
 Burrell, Mr, 195
 Bursell, Thomas, 39
 Burton, Abbot of St Augustine's abbey, 12
 butler, 23

- Bycombe family of Crowcombe, Som,
 Elizabeth, xiii
 Hugh, xiii
 Maud, xiii, xxiv
 Bylingsley, Sir Henry, 53
- Caerleon, 29
 Caesar, Sir Julius, 77
 cake, 112
 Cameley, Som, 10
 Camerton, Som, xiii
 Cannington, Som, 61, 76, 101-2, 105-6,
 115, 130-2, 158, 176
 Canonleigh, Essex, 14
 Canter, . . ., farmer, 116
 Caple, Mr, 195
 Cardiff, xxi, 202
 cards, playing, 99
 Carew, Thomas, xiii, 9, 31, 33
 Caricke, 126
 Carleton, Sir Dudley, Viscount Dor-
 chester, 80, 92
 Carlile, Lady, 73
 Carlisle, 152
 Carne, Sir John, 53
 carpet, persian, 87
 Carr, Edward, 39
 John, 24, 25(n1)
 William, 25(n1)
 carrier, 56, 64-5, 97
 Carswell, Oxon, 147
 Cash, Mr, 22
 cassock, 54-5
 cattle, 18, 35, 39, 41, 173, 193, 198
 Cecil, William, Lord Burghley, 10, 17,
 21
 Robert, Lord Salisbury, 65
 Chamberlain, Robert, 27
 Chamberlayne, Mr, 72
 Champernowne, Philip, 104
 Champneyes, John, 195
 Chantries, Commissioners for Dissolu-
 tion, 3-4
 Chapman, William, Mayor of Bath,
 155(n1)
 charcoal-maker, 173, 190
 Chard, Som, 47, 165
 Charles I, King, xx, xxii, 68-9, 72-3, 81,
 90-1, 93, 104, 127, 142, 143, 148,
 150, 152-4, 168, 177-8
 Coronation of, 73
 Letter of, 177-8
 Cheek (Chick), . . ., 127, 182, 196
 cheese, 17
- Chelvey, Som, 57, 122, 194
 Cheshire, xxiv, 50, 61, 135
 Chester, 76, 79, 81, 88, 104, 106-7, 110-
 1, 115, 118-9, 121, 130, 132, 148, 195
 Chester, Thomas, of Almondsbury, 84
 Chew Magna, Som, 24, 25(n3), 40
 Chewton (Mendip), Som, 40
 Choke chantry, Long Ashton, x, 3, 4, 5
 Choke, Sir John, 3
 Sir Richard, 4(n3)
 Cholmondley, Sir Robert, 121
 cinnamon, 80
 Civil War, xix-xxii, 142-5, 151-4
 Clapton-in-Gordano, Som, 22, 41
 Clarke, Jo, 196
 Claxton, William, 49-52, 56, 59, 78, 80,
 84, 96, 100, 113, 116
 Clevedon, Som, 109, 134
 Clifton, Glos, 153
 Clifton, Sir John, 38
 Clinton, Edward, 10
 cloak, 23
 Cloford, Som, 12(n2), 14, 34, 38-9, 40,
 51-2
 cloth, woollen, xi, 38
 cloves, 136
 coach, 92, 101, 103, 105, 117, 131, 179
 Cobham, Lord, 25
 Cocks, Mr, 56, 102-3
 coinage and money supplies, 198
 Coke, Sir Edward, 90
 Colebrook, Glos, 11
 Colle, . . ., 18
 Colles, George, of Buckland St Mary,
 179, 195
 Colston, Thomas, 47
 Comb, John, 39
 Commission of Array for Somerset, 177
 Compton, Rob., 196
 Compton Dando, Som, xvi, 50, 84
 Cope, . . ., of Kelston, Som, 15
 corn, 149, 193
 Coryton, William, 90
 Costin, Dr, 85, 100
 Cotterell, Rob., 196
 Cottington, Francis Lord, 125, 149
 Council of the Marches, 30
 Court de Wick, Yatton, Som, 83, 85,
 100, 112, 117, 179
 Court of Wards, 125, 138, 139, 140, 158,
 161, 171
 Covenant, Scottish, 142-4, 151-4
 Coventry, John, 130, 132-3, 138-41,
 150-1, 156, 166-7, 197

Thomas, Lord, 132, 139, 151
 Cowarde, John, 196
 Cox, John, 96
 Cox, Rob., 196
 Cox, William, 139, 169
 crabs, 101
 Cradock, . . . , 15
 Cranborne, Dors, 65
 Croft, James, 188
 Crofts, Mr, 148
 Croker, Thomas, 119
 Crosseman, Mr, 74
 Crowcombe, Som, xiii
 Croy, Duke de, 68
 Curle, . . . , 15, 24, 31

 dagger, 59
 dainties, 73, 81
 Dandoe, Will., 198
 Danvers, Sir John, 34
 Darbie, John, 191
 Daubeney (Daubeney), Giles, 6–8
 Henry, Earl of Bridgwater, 7(n1)
 Davies, . . . , 15
 William, 181
 Davis (alias Singer), Edward, 16
 Davis, William, mariner, 16
 Dean, Forest of, ix, xi, 172
 deer, 34–5, 47, 69, 80, 89, 91–2, 97, 99,
 101, 108, 121, 136, 142, 175
 deer-park, 40–1, 46–7, 74
 Denbeigh, Lady, 72–3
 Denys, Francis, 23, 43
 Thomas, 35
 Walter, 23
 Devon, 14
 Dey, William, 86
 Digges, Sir Dudley, 90
 Doddington, Arthur, 138–9, 169
 Sir Francis, 134, 139, 169, 174, 194–5
 Doddridge, Mr, 140–1, 146
 doublet, 54
 Dover, 68
 Downing, Mr, 20, 24, 27
 draper, 3
 duck decoy, 169
 Dudley, Robert, 10
 Duke, Mr, 3
 Dundry, 190–2
 Dunster, Som, xiii
 Duport, Mr, 46
 Durleigh, Som, x
 Dutton, John, 163–4
 dyestuffs, xi

Dyllington, Tristram, 5
 Dype, . . . , 37
 Dyrham, Glos, 12(n1), 22, 24

 Earle, Sir Walter, 90
 Easton-in-Gordano, Som, 34(n1)
 ecclesiastical preferment, 128, 137, 147,
 172, 188–9
 Edward VI, King, 11(n1), 12(n3)
 Edward, John, coroner of Somerset, 21,
 22(n1)
 Edwards, John, bailiff to Thomas Smyth,
 xx, 99, 126, 136, 157, 162, 169, 170–
 1, 173, 176–7, 190, 198
 Edwards, John, St John's College,
 Oxford, 62, 68, 75, 93, 95
 eggs, 20
 Elinge, Martin, Bristol wine-merchant,
 80, 96, 100
 Elizabeth I, Queen, 10, 12(n3), 21, 34,
 37, 38(n1)
 Elmington, Glos, xvi, 154, 169
 enclosures, 18, 42, 43, 46, 74
 Ernle (Ardeley), Edward, 126
 Essex, xv
 Essex, Earl of, 142
 Elizabeth, Countess of, 192–3
 estate business, xiii, xvi, 18, 20, 23, 36,
 40–3, 46, 50–1, 89, 96, 108, 112,
 116, 154, 157, 169–77, 186, 193–4,
 198–200
 see also Agriculture
 Every, Mr, 195
 Ewens, Roger, 39
 Exchequer Court, 20
 Exmoor, 117

 falconers, 101
 Farmborough, Som, 169
 Farewell, Mr, 195
 Farmer, Thomas, 23
 Farwell, . . . , 96
 Fearry, Mr, 121
 Filton, in Whitchurch, Som, xiii, 18, 169
 Filwood, in Whitchurch, Som, 18, 169
 fish, xi, 5, 13, 101, 174
 Fisher, Mr, 155
 Flamsted, Richard, 137
 Flanders, 38, 68
 fleas, 185
 Fleetwood, Sir Miles, 91
 Fleming, Thomas, 83–4
 Folger Shakespeare Library, Washington,
 xxiii, 54–6, 59, 65, 102, 103

- Fontmell, in Child Okeford, Dors, 126
 Foole, the 198
 Foorde, Mr, 195
 Forest of Dean, *see* Dean, Forest of
 Fortune (Fortuni), Baptist, 13
 Foster, Mr, tutor to Hugh Smyth, xx,
 173–4, 199
 Foster, Richard, 137
 France, xi, 37–8, 68–9, 131, 152
 Francis, Mr, 195
 Frear, Thomas, 25–6
 Freedom of Bristol, 201–2
 Freeman, William, 12
 Freke, Mr, 47
 Frome, Som, 12(n2), 40
 funeral costs, Thomas Smyth, 202–3
 furniture, household, 37, 87, 102, 120,
 125, 149

 gamekeeper, 34, 108
 gammon, 158
 gaol, 21, 25, 31, 32, 93
 Gardener, Mr, goldsmith, 46
 gardener, at Ashton Court, 112, 176–7,
 190
 garters, 58
 Gates, Mr, 4
 Genoa, xi
 Gifford (Gyffard),
 . . . , 122, 132
 Dr, 27, 28
 Bartholomew, xv, 79–80, 96, 194
 Edward, xv, 52
 Frances, xv, 52
 Gill, Sir John, 195
 Gill, Alexander, 93–4
 ginger, 136
 girdle, 55
 glaziers, 176, 190, 192
 globes, 58
 Gloucester, 5
 Gloucestershire, xx, xxi, 4, 35
 Sheriff of, 22
 gloves, 65
 Godbeare, William, 86
 Goddard, Mr, 134
 Godwyn (Godwin), Paul, 76, 77, 101, 195
 Golding, Dame Elizabeth, 28(n1)
 goldsmith, 46
 Gondomar, Count of, 68
 Gorge, William, the Queen's servant,
 10, 11(n2), 14
 Gorges family, xxii, 48–9, 68, 108
 Sir Edward, 57, 60(n1), 127
 Edward, Lord Gorges of Dundalk, 65,
 68, 69(n1), 70, 72–4, 77–9, 80, 100–
 1, 119, 194
 Elizabeth, wife of Sir Hugh Smyth and
 later of Sir Gerdinando Gorges, *see*
 Smyth, Elizabeth
 Sir Ferdinando, xviii–xxi, 60, 68(n1),
 101, 103–5, 108, 120, 123–4, 130–1,
 140, 142, 170, 174–5, 177, 189, 194–
 5, 200(n4)
 Frances, 59, 109
 Hellena, Marchioness of Northampton,
 wife of Sir Thomas Gorges, xvi, 50,
 116, 121
 Henry, 107, 110
 Katherine, wife of Edward, Lord
 Gorges, 69, 72
 Sir Robert, 68(n1), 105, 114, 125, 141,
 149, 195
 Samuel, 68, 70, 96, 165, 194–5
 Theobald (Tibbot), 49, 194
 Thomas, fellow of St Alban Hall,
 Oxford, later fellow of All Souls,
 82, 84, 95–6, 98, 100, 104, 125, 131,
 146–7, 169, 172
 Sir Thomas, xvi, xxiv, 47, 48, 50, 59,
 112, 116
 William, 108, 131
 Goring, Lord, 162
 Gowe, Mr, 127
 gown, scholar's, 62
 Gray, George, 86
 Green, John, 34
 Greenwich, 20
 greyhounds, 85, 118

 Haimes, . . . , 23
 Halswell (Haswell), Hugh, 188, 195
 Sir Nicholas of Gatcombe, 50–1, 59
 Hambrook, Glos, 43
 Hammond, Hugh, xi
 hanger, 54, 55
 Hannam, Mr, 42
 Harbine, John, 196
 hare, 19
 Harptree, West, Som, 15
 Harrington, Mr, 195
 Harrison, Mr, 95, 128
 Harry Stoke, in Stoke Gifford, Glos,
 42–4
 Harvey, Nicholas, 188–9
 Harvey, S. . . , 86
 Haswill 'Proctor', 84, 98
 Hatton, Sir Christopher, 21

- hawks, 48
 Hawley, Francis, of Buckland Sororum,
 Som, 88, 144, 180, 195
 Jack, 180, 196
 haymaking, 173, 174, 175, 190
 Heath, Sir Robert, 136, 137
 Hedges, . . . , the carrier, 56
 Hele family, of Easton-in-Gordano, 140,
 145
 Sir John, 153, 195
 Hele, Sir Thomas, of Holberton, Devon,
 107
 Hellena, Marchioness of Northampton,
 wife of Sir Thomas Gorges, *see*
 Gorges, Hellena
 Henly, Mr, of Leigh, 195–6
 Henley, Robert, 136, 137
 Henrietta Maria, Queen of Charles I,
 xxii, 68, 69, 72, 73, 125
 Henry VIII, King, xi, 3, 6(n1), 12(n3), 90
 Herbert family, of Wilton, Wilts, xxii,
 121, 122
 Herbert, Philip, Earl of Pembroke, 136,
 141, 201
 Richard, 121
 Sir William, Earl of Pembroke, 10, 31,
 82, 101
 Hertford, 11
 Hertford, Earl of, xvi, xx–i, 201
 Hill, William, 86
 Hinton St George, Som, xvii, 24, 77, 92,
 94, 96, 97, 98, 99, 107, 110, 117,
 123, 125, 127, 135, 136, 154, 156,
 179, 180, 181, 182–3, 186, 189, 193
 Hipsley (Hipsley), Mr, 195
 John, 10
 John, sheriff of Somerset 1641, 200
 Hitchcocke, . . . , 23
 Hoarat, James, 191
 Hodges, . . . , farmer at Elmington, Glos,
 116
 Hodges, Henry, of Haselbury, Som, 127
 Hodges, John, 196
 Holland, Adam, 137
 Holliwell (Helliwell), John, 104
 hops, 149
 Hopton, Sir Ralph, xx, 82, 135, 140, 145,
 150, 155, 156, 166, 167, 180, 197
 Lady, 51
 Sir William, 130
 Horner family, xv, 40
 Edward, 51, 52
 Sir John, 11, 12(n2), 14, 17, 18, 25, 34,
 35, 38, 39, 40, 52
 Sir John, 195
 Maurice, 40
 Thomas, 102
 horses (nags, jades), 18, 19, 41, 45, 46,
 48, 49, 53, 57, 72, 73, 74, 78, 89, 96,
 97, 98, 117, 119, 131, 177, 180, 193
 horse breeding, 119
 Horsey, George, 91, 110
 Horsington, Som, xvi
 Horsman, Thom, 181
 Horte, . . . , 22
 Horton, Glos, 6
 hose, 54, 58
 Houndstreet, in Marksbury, Som, 150,
 154, 155, 156, 172, 194
 household expenses, 192–4, 198–200
 household servants, 198, 199
 Howard, Charles, 161, 168
 Lord Henry, 49
 W. . . , 10
 Hue and Cry, 181
 Hull, 152
 Hunsdon, Lord, 21
 Hunt, . . . , 22
 Robert, 167
 hunting, 19, 48, 77, 82, 101, 117–8, 180
 see also deer, rabbits, greyhounds
 Huntspill, Som, x
 Huntworth, Som, 6(n2), 39
 Hurst Castle, 50(n3)
 Hyde family, 35
 Edward, 157
 Sir Lawrence, 35
 Ilchester, Som, 39, 150, 160, 165, 166,
 167, 197
 illness and disease, xvi, 33, 51, 54, 59,
 65, 67, 79–71, 74–7, 79, 83, 89, 98,
 105–6, 110, 116–8, 121, 131–2, 134,
 136, 148, 160, 180–5
 see also plague and medicine
 Inner Temple, 4, 5(n7)
 Inns of Court, xii, xxi, 9(n2)
 Ireland, xxi, 35, 38, 48, 57, 82, 119, 162
 iron, xi
 Iron Acton, Glos, 22, 34
 Ivey, Thomas, 22
 Jacob, A. . . , 86
 James I, King, xvi, 48, 49, 46, 59
 James, John, 191–2
 James, Mr, 169
 Jenkins, Thomas, 41
 Jenys, George, 12

- Jermin, Harry, 152
 Jewell, . . ., 191
 Jones, Rob., 196
 Jourdens, Mr. D. . ., 77
 Juxon, William, President of St John's
 College, Oxford, 66, 68, 75, 128, 129
 Kelston, Som, 15
 Kelway, Robert, 3, 4
 Kenn, Som, 4(n4), 46, 184
 Kenn, Christopher, 3, 15, 46, 184
 Kenne, Rob., 196
 Kew, Thomas, 26
 Kewstoke, Som, 39
 Key, Thomas, 15
 Keynsham, Som, x, 9, 40
 Kilmersdon, Som, 40
 Kilvert, Richard, 163
 King's Bench Court, 25
 Kington St Michael, Wilts, 130
 Kingweston, Som, 76, 77, 101
 Knollys, Sir Francis, 10, 21
 Kyrtton, R. . ., 196

 Lambe, Sir John, 152-3
 Langford (Longford), Castle, Wilts, xvi,
 xxiv, 47(n3), 48, 49, 65, 69, 70, 72,
 73, 76-80, 119
 Lapworth, Dr Edward, 84
 Laud, William, archbishop of Canter-
 bury, 104, 125, 164
 Lawrence, Mr. of Berkeley, 12
 lead, xi, 3
 Leasewood, in Whitchurch, Som, 18
 leather, xi
 Lewis, Sir Edward, 53
 Lewis, Henry, 14
 lime kilns, 41
 Lincoln, Earl of, 21
 Lincoln's Inn, 54-6
 Lincolnshire, 70, 74
 Lindsay, L:ord, xix, 143
 Lisbon, 16
 Lisle, Lord, x
 Lizard Point, 122
 Llantarnam, Mon, 17, 22, 28-31, 33
 lobsters, 101
 Lockyer, John, 86
 London, xiii-xiv, xvi-ii, xxii, 4, 13, 23-4,
 26-7, 29, 33-4, 37, 40, 44-5, 49, 54,
 58-9, 60, 65, 68, 79, 88, 92, 96, 102,
 106, 108, 110-11, 114, 116, 120,
 133, 139, 162, 170-1
 Bedford House, 176
 Bishop of, 26
 Bread Street, 91
 Covent Garden, 111, 131
 Denmark House, 106
 Drury Lane, 111
 Durham House, 150-1
 Essex House, 95, 149
 Mermaid, the, 91
 Petty France, 86, 96
 Pye Corner, 24-5
 Redcross Street, Barbican, xv, 17, 20
 St Katherine's 37
 St Paul's Cross, 93, 95
 St Sepulchre's, xiv
 Strand, the, 106, 149, 151, 176
 Temple Bar, 85, 87, 89, 95, 112
 Tutell Street, 88
 Wallingford House, 103
 Westminster, 157, 164, 168
 White Friars, 48
 Whitehall, 80, 136, 141
 Long Ashton, *see* Ashton, Long
 Long, . . ., 37
 Long, ? Robert or Walter, 90
 Longe, R, 196
 Lopez, Roderigo, xiv(n14)
 Lord Chancellor, 29, 38, 43
 Lord Privy Seal, 9
 Lord Treasurer, 17, 22, 125
 louse-catcher, 190
 Low Ham, Som, 165
 Lower Court, Long Ashton, xviii, 4(n4),
 88, 123(n1)
 Ludlow, 41(n1)
 Lukener, Edward, 16
 Lukins, William, 191-2
 Luttrell, Francis, 95
 Mr, 195
 Lydney, Glos, 12(n1), 21(n1), 36(n2)

 mace, 136
 Malet, John, 139
 Mansell, Sir Thomas, 53
 Mansfield, Count, 68
 Mark, Som, xiii
 mariners, 16, 80, 92, 104
 marmalade, 6, 175
 marriage negotiations and portions, 5,
 52, 113, 116, 140, 146, 148, 157-8,
 183, 187, 188
 Martyn, Alderman, 37
 Martyn, William, 3, 4, 9
 masons, 190-2
 masque, performed at court, 72, 73
 Master of the Rolls, 77

- Matthew, Edmund, 53, 194
 George, 55
 May, Richard, 3–4
 Meautys, Thomas, 132–3
 medicine, 38, 71, 80, 83, 98, 110, 136, 144,
 see also illness and disease, and plague
 Melbury, Dors, 53
 Melcombe Regis, Dors, xii
 Mells, Som, 52
 Mendips, the, xi
 Mermayd, sign of, 91
 mice, 112
 Michaell, Tom, 67
 Middle Temple, xv, 14, 18, 23, 31(n1), 40, 45
 militia, xxi, 51, 58–9, 135, 141, 147
 Minehead, Som, xxi, 181
 Moncliff, W. . . , 126
 Monmouthshire, Sheriff of, 31, 32
 Montacute House, xii, 27, 28, 45, 47, 82, 97, 101, 113, 133, 134, 137–41, 146, 159, 166, 176, 194
 Montacute Priory, 27
 Montgomery, Lord, 49, 65, 67
 Moore, John, constable, 19
 Mr, 43
 Morgan, Capt, 195
 Morgan ap Gwilliam, abbot of St Augustines, 12
 Morgan, Mr, 59
 Morgan family of Llantarnam, Mon, xv, 12(n1), 17(n1), 28–9
 Edward, xiv, xxiv, 17(n1), 22, 28–34
 Elizabeth, daughter of Hugh Smyth, xiv, xxiv, 28
 Harry, 29
 John, 36
 George, 17
 Thomas, 30, 32
 William, 29–30
 Morgan, John, estate workman at Ashton Court, 191–2, 202
 Moryce, Mr, 3–4
 Mountjoy, Lord, Earl of Newport, 92
 mourning, 83, 202–3
 for a child, 183–4
 Muchelney, Som, 157
 Murray (Morow), William, 120–1
 Muscovy, (Muscavitt), ambassador from, 27
 musters, 51, 58–9, 127, 135, 201
 Newcastle, 142, 143, 145, 164
 New England, xviii, 60, 123, 147
 New Forest, 109
 Newnham, Glos, x, 4
 Newton, H. . . , 15
 Newton, John, 196
 Newton Theodore, 102
 Newton St Loe, Som, 11(n1)
 Northamptonshire, 70
 Northampton, Earl of, 118
 Norton family, 15, 25
 Sir George, xiv, 13, 14, 15, 16, 18–20, 25, 26, 35
 Samuel, 15, 16, 20, 26
 nurse, wet, 81
 nutmegs, 136
 O'Brien, Henry, Earl of Thomond, 75, 81
 Mary, wife of Henry, 81
 Orchard, Som, 5, 6(n1)
 Orange, R. . . , 196
 Osborne, Sir Robert of Kelmars, Northamptonshire, 69(n1)
 Othery, Som, 132
 overseer of the poor, 134
 Owen, Dr George, xi, xiii, 3, 9
 oxen, *see* cattle
 Oxford, xii, xvi, xvii, xxi, xxii, 9, 57, 58, 61–69, 71, 74, 75, 78, 83, 85, 93, 128–31, 148, 151, 161, 187
 All Souls' College, 95, 104, 125, 172
 Merton, 104
 St Alban Hall, 104
 Trinity College, 93
 feuds at, 104
 Palatine, Elector, 125, 127, 131, 152
 pales, park, 40–1
 Pallets, Mr, 77
 Palmer, Mr, 27, 131
 Parcival, Mr, 195
 Pardine, Mr, 169
 Parker, . . . , 41
 Parliament, xviii, xx, xxii,
 1628: 86, 87, 89–91, 93, 99, 147
 1640: 160–65, 197–8
 1641: 168, 170–78, 200, 201
 Elections: 150, 151, 153, 154, 156, 157, 165, 197
 parliamentary proceedings, 1628: 90–1
 1640: 162–5, 168, 170–2, 198, 201
 see also Smyth, Thomas
 Paris, 68
 Parrimore, . . . , 37

- Parsons, Philip, Fellow of St John's College, Oxford, 66, 71, 75
 partridges, 101
 Pattiswick Hall, Essex, xv, xxiv
 pedigree, 83, 159
 Pembroke, Earl of, *see* Herbert
 Pennington, Sir John, Admiral, 81, 90, 127
 Pentrych (Pentreke), Glam, 17, 31, 33
 pepper, 136
 pest-houses, 75
 Petre, William, 10
 Petty, George, 104
 Phelips family, of Montacute, Som, xv, xxiii
 Bridget, 137(n1), 138-9, 141, 148-9, 157, 159
 Sir Edward, xii, xxiv, 27-8, 46-7
 Sir Edward, 113, 150, 157-60, 166-7, 176, 194-5
 Elizabeth, daughter of Matthew Smyth, xii, xxiv, 27(n1), 46
 Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Robert Phelps, 113, 114, 137, 140-1, 146
 Richard, xii
 Sir Robert, xix, xxii, 70, 82, 89, 95, 113-4, 117, 133-5, 139, 182
 Thomas, xii, 27, 45
 Pickering, William, 93-4
 picture-frames, 121, 192
 picture-drawer, 81
 Piers, John, of Kewstoke, 39
 pigeons, 101
 Piggott, Thomas, of Brockley, Som, 95, 186
 Piggott, . . . , 146
 pike, 19
 Pitt, Humfry, 86
 Plague, the, 12, 33, 37, 65, 67, 74, 75, 89, 116
 see also medicine and illness and disease
 plate, silver, 87
 ploughs, 41, 191
 see also horses
 Plymouth, 122, 124
 poaching, 18, 118
 see also deer
 Poole, Dors, xii
 Popham, Alexander, of Houndstreet, 118, 150, 154-7, 168, 194-5
 Popham, Edward, 39
 Sir Francis, 156, 169, 195
 Hugh, 172
 Sir John, xv, 5, 13, 15, 26, 27(n1), 36, 37(n1), 39, 47
 Poply (Popely), Derricke, Bristol merchant, 15, 87
 Portbury, Som, 18, 127
 Porter, Endymion, 163, 164
 Porter, William, and John his son, 41
 Portman family, 15
 Sir Hugh, 117
 Sir William, 5, 6(n1), 99, 132, 133, 195
 Poulett family, of Hinton St George, Som, xxii
 Sir Amias, 26
 Elizabeth, wife of John, Lord Poulett, 184-6, 193
 G. . . , Mr, 195
 Henry, 139, 186, 195
 John, Lord Poulett, xvii-xix, xxii, xxiv, 77, 83, 85-6, 88, 90, 92, 96, 106, 109-10, 117, 122-7, 134-6, 141-5, 148, 162, 179-85, 192-3, 195
 John, son of Lord Poulett, 124, 154, 159, 167, 177, 181, 194, 197
 Philip, 91, 119
 Powell, Mr, 29-33
 Poyntz, Sir Nicholas, 22, 24, 34
 Nicholas, 139
 Mr, 195
 Preston, Mr, 195
 Price, Richard, 83
 Prickett, John, 20
 Prideaux, Dr John, 185
 Sir Peter, 183
 priest, 40
 Prince's Arms, sign of, 106
 Prinne, Rob, 196
 Privy Council, xiv, 10, 11(n1), 15, 16, 20(n1), 21, 22, 93, 94, 127, 150
 provisions, 17, 89, 101, 136, 158, 175, 198
 Pursuivants, 133
 Pye, Sir Robert, 113, 114, 160
 Sir Walter, 125, 159
 Pym, John, 90, 162
 Pyne, John, 164, 165, 168
 R. . . , 195

 quails, 101
 Quarrells, Peter, 86
 quarrymen, 190-2
 Quarter Sessions, Somerset, 17, 30, 36, 39

 rabbits (conies), 18, 37, 84, 94, 136
 Radcliffe, George, 162, 163

- Raign'd Deer, sign of, 95
 rails, 101
 Raynes, Thomas, 134
 Raven, . . ., 37
 Redlynch, Som, 50, 77, 103, 105, 114,
 116, 121, 125, 148, 149, 159
 Reed, Mr, 42
 rice, 80
 Rich, Sir Nathaniel, 90
 Lady Isabella, 152
 Richards, Matthew, 191
 Ricolt, Sir Peter, 198
 Ridgeway, Glos, xvi, 43
 Ripon, Yorks, xix
 Rippe . . ., of Thornbury, 22
 Robins of the West, 150, 151(n1), 166,
 196
 Roche, Thomas, 19
 Rodney family, 15
 Rodney family, of Rodney Stoke, Som,
 Anne, wife of Maurice, xv, xxiv
 Edward, Sir, 126, 127, 169, 181, 195
 Maurice, xv, xxiv
 Mr, 47
 Rodney Stoke, Som, xxiv, 190, 192
 Rogers family, of Cannington, Som,
 Edward, 61
 E. . ., 10
 Sir Francis, 61, 69, 89, 95-6, 100-1,
 106, 111, 123, 138, 182
 George, 114
 Hellen, wife of Sir Francis, 61-2, 65,
 69, 71, 73, 76, 95, 98, 100, 102, 109,
 131, 132, 140
 Hugh, 138-40, 148, 161, 175, 177,
 188(n1), 195
 Sir John, 8
 Rogerston, Mon, 37
 Rolle, Denis, 117, 158(n2), 179(n1), 182,
 192-3
 Rose, Jo, 196
 Rowght, John, 5
 Rownham ferry, 132, 190
 ruff, 54-5
 Rupert, Prince, 131

 Sachefield, John, 5
 Sackville, R. . ., 10
 saddles, 100, 158
 saffron, 136
 Saintloe, (Cantloe), Henry, 126
 St Albanes, Mr, 195
 St Augustines, Bristol, abbots of, 12
 St Arvans, 29

 St Donat's Castle, 53
 St George, Som, 16
 St Leger, Sir John, 14
 St Loe, Edward, 11
 St Lucas, 16
 St Paul's school, London, 46
 Satchfield, Robin, 108
 Salisbury, Wilts, 69
 salt, xi
 Salter, Mr, 41
 Saltfleetby, Lincs, 37
 Samuell, Mr, 56
 Sanders, R. . ., 196
 Sands, R. . ., 196
 Saracen's Head, sign of, 164
 Satchfield, Robert, 191
 Sandiford, Rob., 196
 satire, 93-4
 Scots, xix, xx, 142-5, 147, 151-4, 158-9,
 163-4, 166, 170-1
 Scotland, xvi, 38, 144
 Sealy, William, mayor of Bridgwater,
 86, 92
 Searle, . . .?, 15
 Selby, Yorks, 143-4
 Selwood, Anthony, 39
 sermons, 61, 63-4, 77, 137, 147, 185
 Seymour, Mr, 23
 Shangham Park (? recte Sharpham), 77
 Shapwick, Som, 15
 sheep, 35, 39, 186, 193-4, 198
 Shepard, Mr, 13
 Shepherd, . . ., 20
 shepherd, 18, 19
 Shepton Mallet, Som, xx
 Sherborne, William, 63-4
 Sherborne, Amys, 40
 Sherborne, Dors, xxi, 134, 157
 Sherrington, Sir Harry, 34
 ship-money, xix, 127-8, 164
 ships, 16, 60, 81, 122-4, 127
 Constant Reformation, xix, 122-4
 Portuguese, 70
 Trinity, xi
 Venetian, 108
 Silke, Thomas, 12
 Simes, Mr, 195
 Skerne, Bartholomew, xv, xxiv
 Skidmore, Mr, 27
 Skinner, Robert, bishop of Bristol, 134
 Smart, Thomas, 109, 188, 189(n2)
 Smith family of Cheshire, 54, 65, 115-6
 Mary, daughter of Sir Hugh Smyth and
 wife of Sir Thomas Smith, xxiv, 54,

- 62, 76, 80–1, 86, 88, 104, 106, 110–1, 115, 118–9, 121, 130, 194
- Stephen, godson of Sir Hugh Smyth, xvii, 54, 55–6, 59, 65, 92, 102–3
- Sir Thomas, xxiv, 54, 59, 62, 79, 81, 95, 100, 106, 107, 121, 130, 132, 194–5
- Thomas, son of the above, 148, 151
- Smyth, Customer, 37
- Smyth (Smith, Smythe) family of Ashton Court, genealogy, xxiv
- Anne, daughter of Thomas Smyth, xxiv
- Dame Anne, 71(n3)
- Elizabeth, wife of 1. Sir Hugh Smyth, 2. Sir Ferdinando Gorges, xvi, xvii, xxi, xxii, xxiv, 47(n3), 57–8, 62, 67, 76, 78–9, 87, 89, 96, 97–8, 100–1, 105–8, 116, 123, 154, 170–1
- Dame Emily, ix
- the Hon. Esmé, ix
- Florence, daughter of Lord Poulett, wife of Thomas Smyth, xvii–iii, xxii, xxiv, 85, 89, 94–6, 98–100, 112, 117, 119, 122–3, 126, 135, 145, 149, 172–6, 179–80, 183–5, 189, 194, 202
- Florence, daughter of Thomas Smyth, xxiv, 106, 123, 194
- Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Smyth, 194
- Sir Greville, ix
- Hellena, daughter of Thomas Smyth, xxiv, 194
- Hugh (1530–80), x, xi, xii–xiv, xxi, xxiv, 9–13, 15–26
- Hugh, Sir, (1575–1627), x, xv, xvi–xviii, xxi–ii, xxiv, 47–50, 52–82
- Hugh, son of Thomas Smyth, xviii, xx, xxiv, 71(n3), 116–7, 119, 121, 173–5, 180, 183, 194, 200(n1), 202
- Jane, wife of Matthew Smyth, xv, xxiv, 17, 40–1, 46–7
- Joan, xiii
- John, of Aylburton, Glos, xxiv
- John, Bristol merchant, ix–xiv, xxiv, 3, 4(n2), 5, 6–9
- Mary, daughter of Thomas Smyth, xxiv, 194
- Matthew, died 1526, and Alice his wife, xxiv
- Matthew (1533–83), x–xii, xv, xxii, xxiv, 9–15, 17–8, 20, 22–46
- Thomas, died 1542, xxiv
- Thomas, (1609–42), x, xvi–xviii, xix–xxiv
- early life, 51, 73
- at Oxford, 57–8, 61–7, 74–6, 78–9
- correspondence with his mother, Elizabeth Smyth, 57–8, 67, 76, 78–9, 87, 89, 96–8, 100, 105–8, 116, 123, 131–2, 154, 170–1
- correspondence with his father, Sir Hugh Smyth, 61, 66, 74–5, 79
- correspondence with his wife, Florence, 85, 94–100, 112, 117, 135, 149, 173–6, 179, 189
- correspondence with his father-in-law, Lord Poulett, 83, 109, 117, 122–4, 126–7, 135–6, 142–5, 179–84
- friendships and social life, 83–5, 88, 90–5, 98, 100–16, 118–22, 125–6, 128–34, 137–8, 140–1, 146–8, 151, 153, 158–61, 172, 175–6, 184–9
- local government work in Somerset, 77, 95, 118, 120–1, 126–8, 132–6, 141, 169, 201
- Member of Parliament, 85–7, 89, 90–1, 92, 157, 170–6
- parliamentary elections and political affairs, 85–6, 93–4, 119, 122–5, 127–8, 142–3, 147, 150–1, 153–6, 160–7, 195–7, 200
- proceedings in the House of Commons, 90–1, 162–4, 168, 170–2, 198, 201
- estate business, 89, 96, 100–1, 112, 136–7, 139, 140, 149, 154, 157, 161, 169–71, 173–7, 183, 186, 188, 190–4, 198–200
- military events leading to the Civil War, 142–5, 147, 152–3, 158–9, 168
- letter from King Charles I, 177–8
- Freedom of Bristol, 201–2
- Will and funeral expenses, 194–5, 202–3
- Snigge (Snygg, Snygge), George, 44
- soap, 25(n1), 131, 198, 200(n1)
- soap-boilers, xi
- Sodbury, Chipping, 96
- soldiers, xviii, 35, 38, 51, 135, 141–5, 201
- Somerset, xiii–iv, xviii–xxi, 4, 7, 12(n1), 15, 168, 177
- sheriff of, 14–15, 18, 24–5, 38, 47, 95, 127, 132–3
- coroner of, 14, 20, 21, 22(n1), 25
- Quarter Sessions, 17, 25, 38–9

- military organisation of, 201
 Lords Lieutenant, 201
 Somerset, Sir Charles, 37
 Somerton, Som, 165
 Soubise, Duc de, 117
 Southampton, Earl of 49
 Spain, xi, 9, 131, 152, 164
 Spark, John, 4(n6)
 Speke, Sir George, 38
 Speke, Mr, 195
 spices, 80, 136
 Spiller, Sir Harry, 163
 Sporge, Richard, 86
 Stafford, Lord, 36
 Stanfaste, Mr, 31
 Stanley, James, Earl of Derby, 111
 Stanshawes, Glos, ix
 Stanton Drew, Som, 11
 starch, 136
 Star Chamber, 20, 23, 25
 Stawell (Stowell), Sir John, of Cothel-
 stone, Som, 86, 117, 135, 156, 165–
 6, 169, 179, 186, 195
 Sternall, Mr, 4
 Steyninges, Jo, 196
 Stocker, Mr, 195
 Stogumber, Som, xiii
 Ston Easton, Som, x, 10(n1)
 Stowell family 15
 Stradling, . . . , 15
 Sir John, 53
 Strafford, Earl of, xix, xx, 91, 119, 162–
 4, 171–2
 Strangways, Sir John, of Melbury, Dors,
 53
 Strode, R. . . , 195
 William, xx
 Stuart, Sir Francis, 74
 Sturdon, Glos, ix, xi
 sugar, 70
 Swayne, . . . , gardener at Ashton Court,
 176–7, 198
 sweetmeats, 71, 80–1, 82(n1)
 sword, *see* weapons
 Sydenham, . . . , 18, 25
 John, 186, 196

 Tasker, Tom, servant at Ashton Court,
 96, 98, 183, 198
 Taunton, Som, 24–5, 36, 101, 134
 tennis, 49–50, 182–3
 Terringham (Tyringham), Dorothy, 91
 Frances, 90, 96, 158–9
 Sir Thomas, 58–9, 67, 109–10

 Tewther, Thomas, xv, 41(n1)
 Thin, Sir James, 152
 Thomas, Edward, 29
 William, 53
 Thomond, Henry and Mary his wife, *see*
 O'Brien
 Thornbury, Glos, 22, 36
 Thorne, near Montacute, Som, 27
 Thorne, Wat., 192
 Thornton, in Marnhull parish, Dors, 7,
 8(n1)
 Throckmorton, Sir Baynham, 99, 148,
 151–4, 162–3, 172–3, 175
 Francis, 27
 Throgmarten, Mr, 23
 Thynne, Sir Thomas, 169
 Tichborne, Hants, 73–4
 Tickenham, Som, 139
 Timberscombe, Som, xiii
 Tippet, Robert, 22–3
 tobacco, 59
 tongue, 157–8
 Tottell, . . . , 37
 Touchet, James, Earl of Castlehaven, 82
 Toulouse, xi
 toys, 58
 travelling companion, 188
 Tredegar, 30, 32
 trenchers, 17
 Trevilian, Mr, 195
 Tucker, Thomas, vicar of Long Ashton
 1623–38, 61–2, 100, 137
 turkeys, 101
 Tuthill, Richard, 86
 tutor, xx, 173, 174, 175
 Twylt, John, 9
 Tyllys, Grace, 30
 Tyndale, Thomas, of Kington St Michael,
 Wilts, 130
 Tynte family, of Chelvey, Som, 68, 122
 Tynte, Anne, 122, 131, 175, 186–7, 188
 Dorothy, 187
 Edward, 57, 187
 Jane, 188
 John, 5, 132, 188, 194–5
 Robert, 57
 Sir Thomas, 122
 Tyringham, Bucks, 91, 109, 159
 Tyringham family, *see* Terringham

 Uphill, Som, 169
 Upton, Mr, 11–12

 Vane, Sir Henry, 152

- Vaune (Van), Glam, 53
 Villeaulclaris, M., ambassador of France, 68
 Wadham, . . . , 15
 wainscot, 25
 Wake, Lady, widow of Sir Baldwin Wake of Clevedon, Som, 104–5, 109
 Walcar, . . . , 41
 Wales, xi, 13, 41
 Walrond, Mr, 135, 195
 Walsingham, Sir Francis, 21
 Walton family of Shapwick, Som, 15
 Walton, Som, 109
 Walton park, 77
 Warminster, Wilts, 77
 Warre, Francis, of Hestercombe, Som, 110
 Roger, 126
 Thomas, 126
 warren, 19–20, 37, 84, 94, 108, 194
 Warres, Mr, 195
 Warwick, Earl of, 97
 Watson, . . . , 37
 Watts, Christopher, 202
 Wayford, Som, 6
 weapons, 19, 55, 59, 65
 Week, *see* Court de Wick
 Wellington, Som, 6(n2), 13
 Wells, Som, x, xx, 21, 35–6, 38, 40, 51, 103, 107, 127, 137, 139, 169
 Welshe, . . . , 37
 Wenman, Sir Francis, 147
 Wentworth, Thomas, Earl of Strafford, *see* Strafford
 West Hatch, Wilts, 35
 Weston, Richard, Earl of Portland, 125
 Wexford, Ireland, 119
 wheat, xi, 16
 wheelwright, 190
 Whitchurch, Som, xvi, xxi, 11(n1), 20, 40, 156, 169
 White, Thomas, 3
 Whiteington, Mr, 196
 Whiteladies, Salop, xv, 52
 Whiting, Mr, 134
 wild fire, 182
 Williams, . . . , 15
 Wilson, Agnes, 21(n1)
 Nicholas, 37
 Thomas, Secretary of State, xv, 20, 21(n1), 22, 37, 38(n1)
 Wilton, Wilts, xxii, 65, 82
 Windebank, Sir Francis, 163
 wine, xi, 198
 Gascon, 41
 Rhenish, 70
 sweet, 148
 white, 148
 Wingham, Mr, 93
 Winsham park, 109
 Winter family of Lydney and Dyrham, Glos, xv, 11–12, 31
 George (died 1581), 11–12, 13, 21–2, 24
 John, 21, 36(n2)
 Sir John, 172–3, 195
 Sir William, admiral, 12(n1), 21(n1), 36, 37
 Winterbourne, Glos, x, 6(n2), 42
 Winterstoke, Som, 127–8
 Wiseman, Richard, 122
 witchcraft, 112
 Witham Friary, Som, 52, 82, 197
 woad, xi
 woodknife, 55
 woods and timber, 3, 110, 157, 169, 172–3
 Worksop, Notts, xvi
 Woodhouse, Mr, 76
 Woodruf, Mr, 91
 Woodson, . . . , 51
 Wookey, Som, x
 Wraxall, Som, 57, 60(n1), 68(n1), 96(n2), 194
 Wright, Mr, Clerk of the House of Commons, 108
 Writh, Nathan, 198
 Wroth, Sir Thomas, 92–3, 168, 197
 Wyndham, Edmund, xx, 168
 Edward, 200
 Sir John, 195
 Mr, 195
 Wynington, J. . . , 130
 Yatton, Som, 124, 180
 Yeoman, . . . , 37
 Yeovil, Som, 160
 Yong, W. . . , 67
 York, xix, 142–5
 Youghall, Ireland, 57
 Young, Sir John, 16, 34, 87(n1)
 Robert, 196

